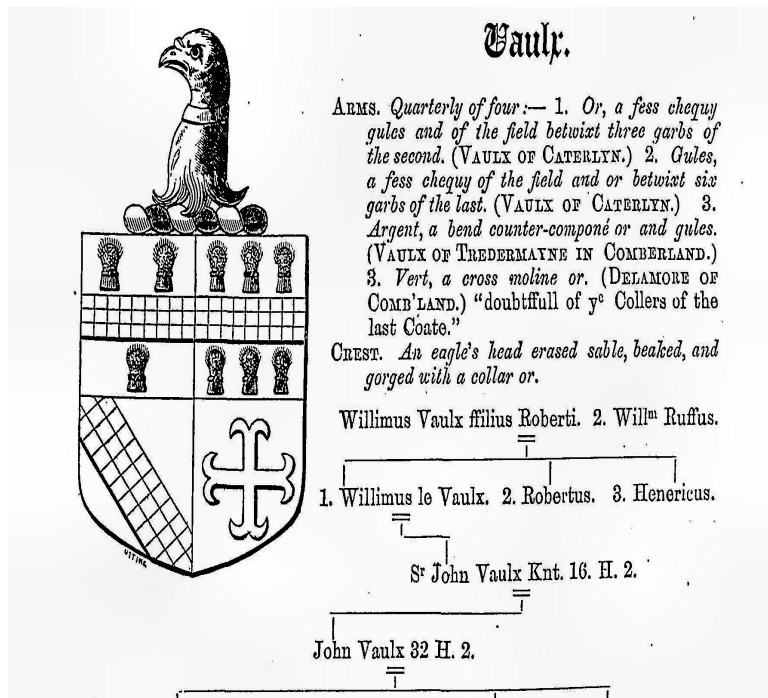


The Vaulx Family of England, Virginia, and Maryland

Including a Discussion of Some Members of the
Vass Family of Eastern Virginia

Michael L. Marshall

October 2012



Arms of Vaulx of Cumberland, England

CONTENTS

VAULX OF ENGLAND.....	4
Origin of Vaulx Line in England	4
James Vaulx “Medicus” of Wiltshire	10
VAULX FAMILY OF VIRGINIA AND MARYLAND	17
Introduction	17
Robert Vaulx, Merchant of London and Virginia.....	17
Robert Vaulx of Westmoreland County, Virginia.....	23
James and Elisheba Vaulx of York County, Virginia.....	33
Elisheba Vaulx.....	42
Issue of James and Elisheba.....	45
Robert Vaulx	46
John Vaulx	48
James Vaulx	48
Thomas Vaulx, chirurgeon.....	50
Humphrey Vaulx	55
John Vause of Middlesex County, Virginia.....	58
NOTES ON THE VASS FAMILY OF ESSEX COUNTY, VIRGINIA.....	63
Introduction	63
John Vass family.....	69
Philip Vincent Vass.....	70
John Vass Jr.	71
Henry Vass	74
Reuben Vass	75
Ann and Catherine Vass	77
Vincent Vass Sr. of King and Queen County.....	79
Introduction	79
Known Children of Vincent Vass, Sr.	87
Sarah Vass	88
Vincent Vass Jr.	92
Richard Vass.....	95
Caty Vass.....	96
Philip Vass.....	96
Boyd Family Excursus	102
Thomas Vass.....	112
Origin in King and Queen County	112
Reverend Thomas Vass of Granville County, North Carolina	118
Edward Voss, alias Vass	126
Appendix A: Vaulx Records of Bruton Parish Church.....	144
Appendix B: Inventory of Estate of James Vaulx	145

Foreword

One of my ancestors is Rev. Thomas Vass, who was one of the early ministers of Grassy Creek Baptist Church near the town of Oxford, in Granville County, North Carolina. A history of the church written by one of its ministers in the 1800s gives a short biography of Vass. It states he was born about 1738 in King and Queen County, Virginia. Unfortunately, King and Queen is one of those “burned” counties, meaning that courthouse fires have destroyed most of its early records. This makes family research in that county very difficult. Even so, it seems there is circumstantial evidence that Thomas was the son of a Vincent Vass who lived in the 1750s in King and Queen and appears in the vestry records of Stratton Major Parish as a processioner. Thomas also appears in the vestry records in the 1770s as a “lay reader,” indicating he was literate. This Vincent of King and Queen, County, denoted here as Vincent Vass Sr., was probably the son of John Vass of Essex County, Virginia who died there in 1755. He, in turn, was the son of an earlier Vincent Vass who died in Essex in 1727.

The name of the Vincent Vass who died in Essex in 1717 appears in several variants in the old records that I have seen, including Vaus and Vause. His given name also appears in some records as “Vinson” instead of Vincent. This given name is somewhat unusual in early Virginia records although examples of its use certainly do exist. There is the habit among colonial Virginians to use the wife’s surname as a given name. Examples include Carter Braxton, Bird Boyd, Beverley Carter, Beverley Bland, and so on. This suggested to me the possibility that Vincent or Vinson could be a family name that became a given name through the marriage of a family named Vincent or Vinson and Vass or one of its variants such as Voss, Vaus, Vause, Vaux and Vaulx, which are all seen in Virginia records. This, in turn, led me to research individuals in early Virginia with those surnames. In doing so, I discovered that a number of them are all descendants of a James Vaulx, called “medicus” because he was a physician, who lived in the early 17th century in Wiltshire, England. He in turn is a descendant of the ancient family of Vaulx or de Vaulx of Cumberland, England, that originated in France and came to England about the time of the Norman invasion.

I began this draft hoping that when finished, it would contain all or most of what I found on the Vaulx family of Virginia. However, I did not achieve my aim, so this is all I have for now. Even incomplete, it might be of interest to some who have connections of the families mentioned here.

Over the many years that I have conducted research on the lines outlined here, I have received help from many others researchers. Among these, I am especially grateful to Susan Harris, Jim Defigh, Louise Castens, Don Bennett, Gail Banks, and many others.

Vaulx of England

Origin of Vaulx Line in England

Records indicate the first of the Vaulx line in England was Harold, who came about the time of the Norman invasion.¹ He settled in Cumberland, England, near Penrith, in the Parish of Newton-Reigney. Harold had several sons including Robert, Hubert, and Ranulf. According to Burke's *Landed Gentry*, Hubert was Lord of Gillesland, Ranulf Lord of Tryermain, and Robert Lord of Catterlyn.

The Manor of Catterlen or Catterlyn was located about 3 miles northwest by north of Penrith, and was held by the Vaulx family for several hundred years. However, title to the manor eventually fell to an heiress who bequeathed it to John Christian Curwen, Esq. of Workington Hall, from whom it passed by sale to the Duke of Norfolk, and thence to Henry Howard, Esq., of Greystoke Castle.

Dr. James G. Horsfall, a renowned scientist and member of the National Academy of Science, re-searched this Vaulx family extensively some years ago, and documented his work in a book called *The Vaulx Road for 900 Years*. In it, he describes a visit he made to Catterlen Hall in 1981, where he enjoyed the hospitality of then-owner, Mr. J. J. Dent. The manor house itself is located about a half mile north of the parish church of Newton-Reigny, which is shown in Figure 1. Horsfall comments:

“Mr. Dent said that the house was very run down when he purchased it, that the great hall was being used for a hen house. He has done a splendid job in restoring it, said he found a window that he did not know existed. The newspaper article (which Dent noted was printed on the occasion of his purchase of the manor) said in part that Henry I (King from 1100 to 1135) “granted Kaderleng or Catterlen to (Hubert) of Gillesland. In this way the great family of Vallibus or Vaulx and later Vaux became possessed of Catterlen manor ... Eventually it was sold to Howard, Duke of Norfolk. Earliest portion is the pele tower (a fortified residence) built about 1450 with walls four feet thick.”

¹ Those interested in a more detailed history of the Vaulx line should consult the following references: Richard S. Ferguson, *A history of Cumberland* (E. Stock: 1890) ; J. Murray, *The Battle Abbey roll: with some account of the Norman lineages* (J. Murray: 1889); *Sketch of A Genealogical and Historical Account of the Family of Vaux, Vans, or De Vallibus* (W.E. Wil-mot: 1800); Charles Henry Browning, *The Magna Carter barons and their American descendants* (Philadelphia: (s.n.): 1898); T. F. Bulmer, *History, topography and directory of Eastern Cumberland* (T. Bulmer & Co.: 1884); and *The English Illustrated Magazine*, 1885-1885 (Mac millan & Co.: 1885).



Figure 1: Newton-Reigny Parish Church

It appears that the center portion of the hall was built in 1577, or over a hundred years after the pele tower was constructed. According to Horsfall, in 1890 the arms of the Catterlen were still evident over the old kitchen door with the inscription: “Let mercy and faithfulness never seem to go from the (illegible.)” And underneath these words: “At this time Rowland Vaux, Lord of this place and builded (sic) in the year of God 1577,” with the letters RV and AV, the initials of Rowland and Anne Vaux his wife. Catterlen Hall still stands as shown by a recent photograph, Figure 2.

According to the book, *The Norman People*, the Vaulx family is of record in Provence, France as early as the 8th century AD. The name, which is Norman, and baronial in origin, has many variants, including de Vallibus, Vale, Valx, Vaulx, Vaulse, Vaulce, Vaus, Voesse, Vause, Vauce, Vauss, Wauss, and Waus, Vass, and Voss, to mention only a few. The Castle of Vaux, or de Vallibus, is mentioned by the historian Ordericus Vitalis as being in existence in the year 775. He also notes that, in 1080, Robert de Vals, or Vaux, gave his tithes to St. Evroult. Robert held fiefs in 1086 in the eastern counties of England, and by gift of Ranulph Meschin, Dalston, and Cumberland. Another brother, Aitard de Vaux, held in Norfolk in 1086.



Figure 2: Catterlen Hall Near Penrith, Cumbria, England

The name has geographic origins, and comes from the Norman-French Val or Vale (Valley), and its plural Vals or Vau(l)x, from the Latin Vallis. Throckmorton, in an article in the *William & Mary Quarterly*, speaks of the Vaulxes after they immigrated to England: “In the reign of Stephen (1135-1154), Hubert de Vallibus and his brother Robert, were seized of great landed possessions. Hubert, living 1149, held divers Lordships, among them, Gillesland and Tryermain (which) ended in an heiress, who married *temp.* Edw. I, William de Vaux of Catterlyn.”

Jefferson’s *History of Leith Ward, Cumberland* tells how the family got Catterlyn, which is in the Parish of Newton-Reigney: “In the reign of William the Conqueror, it was in the hands of Haldane, father of Wilfred who was accused of high treason by Hubert de Vaux or de Vallibus, Lord of Gillesland, for espousing the cause of King Stephen against Henry II. The Manor was taken from him and confirmed to Hubert by the latter prince (i.e., Henry II). Hubert’s descendants by a young branch known as the family of Vaux of Catterlyn enjoyed the manor for several generations.”

Gillesland supposedly takes its name from the Gyll family, an ancient family of Cumberland. In the English publication, *Notes and Queries*, it is said that one Bueth Gille held an estate in Cumberland styled “Gille’s Land” before the Conquest.² It was confiscated and granted by William the Norman to one of his followers called Hubert, who assumed the name Valle or Vaux, which is the exact synonym for Gyll, and this latter means cleft, or any fissure in a mountain, or break like a valley. Robert, son of Hubert, murdered Bueth Gille, brother of Bueth, and confirmed himself in the possession. Denton’s *History of Cumberland* mentions Lanercost Abbey, which was founded by Hubert de Vallibus to ap-

² *Notes and Queries*, 2nd Series, vol. X, 28 July 1860.

pease the wrath of heaven for the murder of Bueth Gille.³ Denton also notes that a descendant of De Vaux married Thomas De Multon, and subsequently, in the time of Henry III, the property was conveyed to the family of Dacre, styled Dacres of Gille's Land. From this family descended the Gille or Gylle family.

Another interesting commentary regarding the De Vaux family appears in *Notes and Queries* under the heading "Lord William Howard," and was contributed by one Frencheville L. B. Dykes.⁴ This reads as follows:

"The tombstone found lately at Brampton Old Church in Cumberland, is in no way connected with Lord William Howard, being, both from appearance, and as proved by the facts, long anterior to his time. The arms of Howard therefore, as might be expected—he being the first of the family who became connected with the county—do not appear at all upon the stone. It is of an oblong shape, divided into three compartments or shields. In the first is "a bend chequy," which, if coloured, would be "argent, a bend chequy or and gules," for "De Vaux of Tryermaine." In the second are "three escallops," if coloured, "gules three escallops, argent," for "Dacre;" and in the third is "a cross flory, in the dexter chief an escallop," if coloured, "gules, a cross flory, argent, in the dexter chief an escallop of the second," for "Delamore." The first shield, therefore, no doubt designates the stone as having belonged to the family of "De Vaux of Tryermaine." The death of the last male of this family, Roland, would take place not later than towards the middle of the reign of Edward IV. The exact date of it is not known, but the marriage of one of the younger of his granddaughters and coheireses (children of his daughter Jane and Sir Richard Salkeld of Corby) with my ancestor William Dykes took place 21 Edward IV, according to records of the Heralds' College and settlement of that date; say, therefore, 1470 as the date of death. This at the latest places the date of the stone 170 years anterior to the death of Lord William Howard in 1640. It will most probably be much more. The other quarterings will be the alliances of the family of De Vaux of Tryermaine with the neighboring of Dacre of Gillesland and Delamore. In the pedigree of De Vaux of Tryermaine the names of the wives are not given, with the exception of one "Joan," 36 Edward III. This (as far as such may go) is a "Dacre" name. An alliance with Delamore is recorded in the pedigree of the kindred family of Vaux of Catterlen, 20 Edward IV originating very probably from the previous one. The position of a family tomb at Brampton, Tryermaine being in the parish of Lanercost, and the manor of Brampton having for some time been the property of the Dacres, and after them of the Howards, may account for the fact of the Tryermaine family having also from an early period been in possession of it. Sir Roland de Vaux, temp. John, the first of the line, is recorded in the pedigree as being 'Lord of the manors of Brampton and Tryermaine and the appurtenances, by gift of his brother Robert' (of Gillesland)."

A pedigree of Vaulx of Cumberland can be found in *The Visitation of the County of Cumberland in the Year 1615*.⁵ From this pedigree, and other information, Horsfall produced the line of descent of

3 The Abbey was founded in 1166. Today, the chancel and transepts are in ruins, but the 13th century nave lives on as the parish church. When the priory was disbanded in the Dissolution of the Monasteries, the north isle became the parish church, but in 1740, the entire nave was roofed and became part of the church.

4 *Notes and Queries*, 2nd Series, vol. vi, 20 Nov 1858.

the Vaulx family of Virginia shown in Figure 3. In addition, Horsfall's book provides additional details on some members of the Vaulx family mentioned in Figure 3. The data are from Jefferson and are keyed to the stop numbers in the chart.

no. 2. Robert became Baron of Dalston and founded the Priory of Pentney. He married Agnes Fitzwater, daughter of Ralph Fitzwater and Matilda Langetot.

no. 4. Robert had several sons. One son, Oliver, fathered the Harrowden Vaulx line. Browning (1915) in his "Index to Magna Carta Barons," stated that in 1215, Oliver de Vaux, Ranulf de Vaux, and Robert de Vaux were among the Barons of Runnymede "to procure the Magna Carta from King John." Presumably, Robert is no. 4 and Oliver is his son. Ranulph presumably descends from Ranulph.

no. 7. William of Catterlyn, Knight. Another son, John, was the ancestor of the Vaulxes of Odiham, Hampshire, England.

no. 8. William of Catterlyn, Knight. Married Margery Vaux, heiress of Tryermain. Her branch had split off from Ranulf, son of Harold of Normandy.

no. 9. William married a daughter of Sir Richard Salkeld, Knight, of Corkeby Castle, Cumberland. He was living *temp.* 24 Edward III or about 1351.

no. 13. William married a Brougham. He was called William, the elder.

no. 14. William married Isabella de la More.

no. 15. John married as his first wife a Carpenthorpe. He married, secondly, Mary Skelton.

no. 16. William married Jane Leybourne. He was subject to border service in 1542.

The English Segment						The Virginia Segment				
Stop no.	Name	Date		Stop no.	Name	Date		Stop no.	Name	Date
1.	Harold			10.	John	48 Ed III	1375	19.	Robert	bap. 22 Oct 1615
2.	Robert	2 Wm II	1089	11	John	20 Ri II	1397	19.	Thomas	bap. 18 Aug 1617

5 Harleian Society Publications, vol. 7: The visitation of the county of Cumberland in the year 1615. Taken by Richard St. George, Norroy king of arms. Ed. by John Fetherston. London, 1872.

3.	William			12.	John	4 He IV	1405	19.	Humphrey	bap. 18 Oct 1624
4.	Robert	Temp. He II	1164	13.	William	8 He V	1421			
5.	John	Temp. John		14.	William	20 Ed IV	1481			
6.	John	32 He II	1186	15.	John	Ri III	1483			
7.	William	Temp. He III		16.	William	35 He VIII	1544			
8.	William			17.	John		Ca. 1540			
9.	William	24 Ed III	1351	18.	James "medicus"	b. ca.1570	d. 17 Mar 1626			

Figure 3: Probable Line of Descent of Vaulx Family of Virginia

From Cumberland, branches of the family spread to other English counties and into Scotland. One branch, *Vaulx of Whipsnade*, is recorded in the published pedigrees of Bedfordshire.⁶ Another, Vaulx of Odyam, settled in Hampshire, England.⁷ This line begins with Richard Vause of Odyam who married Edythe daughter of John Dale of Tudworth, Hants (i.e., Hampshsire). They had issue including Robert Vause, who married a sister of Sir Edmund Ludlow (a name that will be discussed later),

6 Harleian Society Publications, vol. 19: *The Visitations of Bedfordshire, annis domini 1566, 1582 and 1634* made by William Harvey, esq., Clarenceux King of Arms, Robert Cooke, esq., Clarenceux King of Arms and George Owen, esq., York Herald, as Deputy for Sir Richard St. George, knight, Clarenceux King of Arms. Together with Additional Pedigrees, Chiefly from Harleian ms. 1531 and an Appendix Containing a List of Pedigrees Entered at the Visitation of 1669; also Lists of Bedfordshire Knights and Gentry Taken from Landsdowne ms. 877. Edited by Frederic Augustus Blaydes.

7 Harleian Society Publications, vol. 64: *Pedigrees from the visitation of Hampshire made by Thomas Benolt, Clarenceux a 1530, enlarged with the visitation of the same county made by Robert Cooke, Clarenceux anno 1575 both which are continued with the visitation made by John Phillipott, Somerset (for William Camden) in a 1634*. As collected by Richard Mundy in Harleian ms. no. 1544. Ed. by W. Harry Rylands. 270 pages. London. 1913.

Nicholas, John, and Anne. Robert and Ms. Ludlow had issue including Richard, Nicholas, George, Ursula, and Scecelly.

Volume II of the series *Notable Southern Families* indicates that the Vau(l)x or Vaus family of the Galloway area of Scotland descends from the English Vaux line of Vaux of Gillesland. Therein it is written:

“Hubert de Vaux or de Vallibus, was the eldest son of Harold, Lord de Vaux of Normandy, who went over with William, the Conqueror in 1066 and was as first lord of Parliament for the Barony of Gilliesland. This Hubert was ancestor of the Lords of Ruthvine, Ker, and Home as well as the Earls of Bothwell. All of these families bear the quartered arms of Vaux. It is many centuries since the noble house of Vaux in England became extinct and the peerage remained in abeyance until 1838, when it was revived in the person of George Mostyn, Esq., heir male to Mary, sister of the last Lord Vaux of Harrowden. However, according to Playfair, the male line was carried by Johannis (John) Vaux who settled in Galloway, married an heiress and obtained the lands of Barnbarroch in Scotland. Barnbarroch Houyse, located in the parish of Kirkeimer, near the town of Wigtown, is said to be one of the most beautiful in the county.”

Kirkcudbright sits on Wigown Bay across Solway Firth from Cumbria, England. *Notes and Queries* mentions that, in 1826, there was a privately printed an eight volume tract called *Short Account of the Family of Le Vaux, or Vaus of Barro-varroch*, that contains a detailed history of this Scottish line. The name appears elsewhere in Scotland, and may refer to branches of the Barro-varroch line.⁸

James Vaulx “Medicus” of Wiltshire

Another branch of the Catterlyn line is recorded in a 1623 visitation of Wiltshire, England.⁹ This pedigree is reproduced below in Figure 4. As will be seen later, it appears that members of this Wiltshire branch removed to Virginia in the second quarter of the 17th century. They include Robert (6) and Thomas (7) shown in the pedigree below. A third brother, Humphrey, who came with Robert and Thomas to Virginia, was born in 1624, so is not shown in the 1623 visitation.

⁸ *Notes and Queries*, 2nd Series, no. 8, Feb 23 1856.

⁹ Harleian Society Publications: *Wiltshire Visitation Pedigrees 1623*, ed. G.D. Squibb, Harleian Society, 1954; “with additional pedigrees and arms collected by Thomas Lyte of Lyte’s Cary, Co. Somerset, 1628.

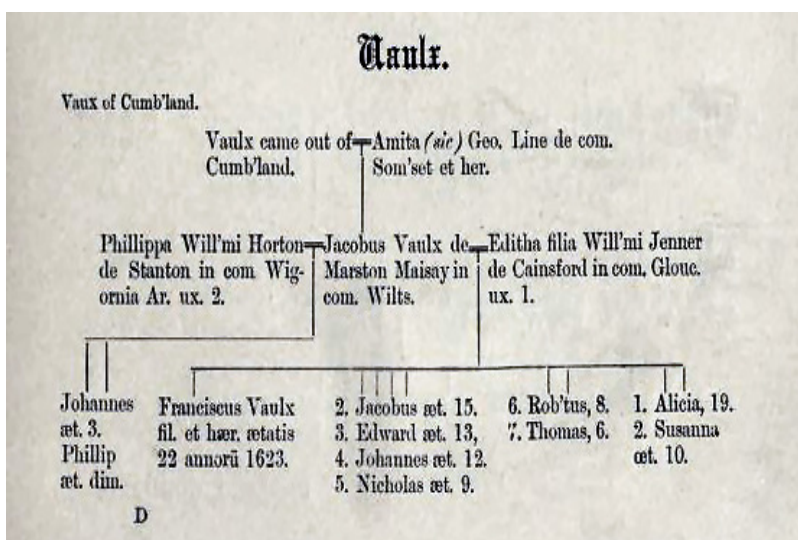


Figure 4: 1623 Pedigree of Wiltshire Vaulxes

There is some evidence to suggest that it was Rowland's brother, John, who settled in Wiltshire and became the progenitor of that branch of the family. If so, he is the man described in the 1623 Wiltshire Visitation Pedigree, shown in Figure 4, as the "Vaulx who came out of Cumb'land." This would be John listed as number 17 in Horsfall's chart (Figure 3). According to this pedigree, he had a son James Vaulx "medicus" of Marston Maisey in the county of Wiltshire. The Latin term "medicus" indicates that James was a chirurgeon, or medical doctor. There is another version of the pedigree shown in Figure 4 in *Visitatio Heraldica Comitatus Wiltoniae A.D. 1623* (1828) which is Latin for the herald's visitation of the county of Wiltshire. In this pedigree, Vaux of Cumberland is show as marrying "amita and h. of George Lyne of co. Somerset." As it turns out, *amita* is Latin for paternal aunt or father's sister, and the "h." stands for heir, so a proper reading of this pedigree suggests that Vaulx who came out of Cumberland married the paternal aunt and heir of George Lyne of Somerset. There is a Somerset will of Sir Alexander Brett dated 13 Sep 1633 that refers to "my Lady Lynd." The name Lyne is also seen as Line and as Lynd and Lynde, and will be mentioned again shortly.

Where James "medicus" was born is not known, although it may have been in Cainsford (now Kempford), Gloucestershire since his first wife was born there, and because his first three children (at least) were baptized there, Figure 5. James was probably born about 1570.

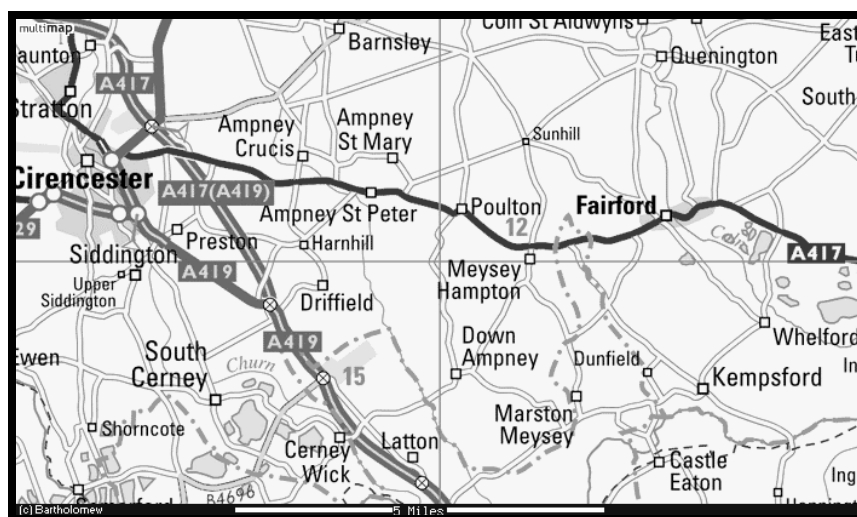


Figure 5: Marston Meysey, Wiltshire, and Environs

On 18 Jan 1598/99, James married Editha Jenner, whose name also appears in the records as Gynnor. She was baptized 3 Nov 1576, and was the daughter of William Jenner of Cainsford, Gloucester. A pedigree of this Jenner family can be found in George Sherwood’s, *The Pedigree Register*.¹⁰ James and Editha had 12 children listed with baptismal dates as shown in Figure 6.

Name	Baptismal Date
Francis, son and heir	5 Nov 1599
Alice	25 Nov 1601, buried 23 Aug 1603
Alice	28 Oct 1603
son	d.ca.1605
son	d.ca.1607
James	ca. 1607/08
Edmund	ca. 1609
John (the elder)	20 Sep 1611
Susannah (to Virginia?)	18 Jul 1613
Nicholas	21 Jul 1614
Robert (to Virginia)	22 Oct 1615
Thomas (to Virginia)	18 Aug 1617

Figure 6: Children of James Vaulx “medicus” and Editha Gynnor

¹⁰ George Sherwod (ed.) *The Pedigree Register* (London: published by the editor, 1910-13), vol. ii, p. 154.

Editha died on 18 Aug 1617 at the young age of 41. Shortly thereafter, in about 1618 or 1619, James remarried to Phillipa Horton of Staunton, Worcestershire. She was the daughter of William Horton Esq., who died 13 Nov 1618, and was buried in Staunton Church.¹¹ Children of James and Phillipa are shown in Figure 7. James “medicus” died 17 Mar 1626/27. His widow, Phillipa, married secondly, a Mr. Baynham. She died 2 Jun 1631, and was buried 5 Jun 1631 in Staunton Church.

In the book *The Heraldry of Worcestershire*, by H. Sydney Grazebrook, there is this note of the family Horton of Staunton: “This family succeeded the Whittingtons, whose heiress they married, as lords of Staunton, where they continued till William Horton sold the manor to Sir Thomas Cooke, about the middle of the seventeenth century.—Sable, three bendlets engrailed argent; borne quarterly with St. Lowe, Whittington, and Hauteville, by William Horton, of Staunton, who died in 1612. On the tomb of this William Horton, at Staunton (says Nash¹²), there is also the engrailed bendlets with a canton. The family also appears to have borne a stag’s head cabossed, which coat appears on the tomb (at Staunton) of Phillis Baynham, daughter of William Horton, of Staunton; but the coat impaled on the tomb (in Meysey-Hampton church, Gloucestershire) of James Vaulx, who was this lady’s first husband, is the engrailed bendlets on a field sable. (See Rudder’s *Gloucestershire*, p. 544).”

anciently lords of Cotheridge, bore, Checky or and gules, on a chevron azure three roses of the first.

Name	Baptismal Date
John (the younger)	22 Jul 1620
Phillipa	22 Jul 1621
Philip	8 Jun 1623
Humphrey (to Virginia)	18 Oct 1624

Figure 7: Children of James Vaulx “medicus” and Phillipa Horton

Grazebrook also mentions three Vaux families.¹³ The first, Vaux of Worcestershire, has arms borne by Sir John de Vaux in the time of Edward II (Gules semee of martlets or, an inescutcheon of the last charged with two lions passant azure). The second had these arms: Argent, on an inescutcheon gules within an orle of eight estoiles of the last a lion’s head erased of the first. The third had arms Checky or an gules, a mullet for difference. It is said that “This is a verie antient and honourable bear-

¹¹ A detailed history of the manor of Staunton, Worcestershire, can be found in volume 4 of the *Victoria County History of the County of Worcester*.

¹² Treadway Nash, *Collections for the History of Worcestershire* (1781).

¹³ H. Sydney Grazebrook, Esq., *The Heraldry of Gloucestershire &c.* (London: John Russel Smith, 1873) vol. ii, pp. 592-3.

ing, and belonged to one Mr. Vaulx, in the Cittie of Worcester, who was a great herald and a mighty lover of antiquities; but I can't find that there is any of his left." The Vauxes of Harrowden who were lords of Cotheridge bore, according to Grazebrook, these arms: Checky or and gules, on a chevron azure three roses of the first.

According to Horsfall, James "medicus" lived in Marston Meysey and apparently had a pest house there for his patients with leprosy or other ailments. He commuted to the Meysey Hampton church about 2 miles across the border in Gloucestershire. In the first volume of Blacker's *Gloucestershire Notes and Queries*, it is stated that "Dr. Vaulx's reputation was so great, that it is said King James I sent for him to make him his physician; but asking how he had acquired his knowledge in the healing art, whether from reading, or by observation and practice, and being answered, by practice, his Majesty replied, 'Then by my saul thou has killed mony a mon; thou shlt never practice upon me,' and so dismissed him." The will of "James Voasse, Gentleman of Hampton Massey, Gloucestershire," was proved 19 Jun 1627 in the Prerogative court of Canterbury (PROB 11/152).

James's eldest son and heir, Francis Vaulx, seems to have followed in his father's footsteps as a medical doctor as evidenced by an entry in Joseph Foster's *Alumni Oxonienses*, a compilation of the graduates of Oxford University, England. Therein is listed a Francis Vaux with the following information: Born in Gloucester, son of James Vaux, gent., of Marston-Meysey, Wiltshire, gent. Matriculated Broadgates Hall 12 Dec 1623, aged 22. B. Med. (Pembroke College) 28 Apr 1626. The English poet, William Browne (ca. 1590 – ca. 1645), who was born in Tavistock, Devon, penned a poem called 'On Mr. Vaux, The Physician,' which is believed to be about Francis Vaulx, the son. Browne was educated at Oxford University and could have come into contact with Vaulx while studying there.¹⁴

Before he died on 30 Jan 1631/2, Francis erected a monumental statue that still stands today in the parish church of St. Mary the Virgin in Meysey Hampton, pictured in Figure 8.¹⁵ Included are life-size effigies of Dr. James flanked by his two wives and small effigies of his sixteen children. He is shown with a Shakespearian spade beard. His wife, Editha, is to the left and below her are effigies of ten of her children. Phillipa, is on his right, and below her are effigies of her three surviving children. Phillipa's clothes appear to be more Jacobean, while Editha has an Elizabethan ruff around her neck. A skull is show at the feet of both Editha and James meaning they were both deceased when the statue was erected. According to a statement on James's statue, he was called "esquire" and described as "a

¹⁴ Gordon Goodwin (ed.) *The Poems of William Browne of Tavistock* (London: Lawrence & Bullen, 1894), vol. ii, pp. 289-90. The suggestion the poem is about Francis Vaulx is on p. 349.

¹⁵ The estate of Francis Vaux was administered by his wife Catherine (see *Administration Act Books*, P.C.C. 1631-1633, f. 80)

famous Practitioner in Physick and Chirurgery . . . who deceased March 17, 1626, to the generall loss of the whole Countrey, the private Griefe of all his Friends, more particularly of his sorrowful Wife.” The church itself is pictured in Figure 9.



Figure 8: Monumental Statue of James Vaulx and his Two Wives



Figure 9: Church of St. Mary the Virgin, Meysey Hampton, Gloucestershire

There is a detailed and interesting discussion of this statue of James Vaulx and his wives in vol. xxxi of the *Transactions of the Bristol and Gloucestershire Archaeological Society*. Among other

things, it discusses the heraldry of the families connected with Vaulx and his wives. The names involved are Vaulx, Lynde, Yonge, Whittington, Hauteville, and Horton.

Francis' widow was named Katherine (also spelled Catherine). Horsfall tells us that before she died in 1676, she willed to her "cousin" Thomas Vaulx "all my instruments of chiurgery and all my books." Presumably, these were left to her by her husband. We will later see a Thomas Vaulx who immigrated to Virginia, who was also a chirurgeon; however, he died in the early 1650s, and so could not be the Thomas mentioned in Katherine Vaulx's will.

Child	Event	Parents	Date	London parish
Humphrey Voss	christening	Humphrey & Elizabeth	31 Dec 1649	St. Dunstan Stepney
Luce Vosse	christening	Humphrey & Elizabeth	22 Sep 1644	Do.
John Vauce	christening	William & Margaret	12 Apr 1643	Do.
Samuel Voss	marriage	Ann Hopkins	21 Oct 1647	Do.
William Vauce	christening	William & Margaret	4 Mar 1649	Do.
George Voss	christening	Philipp & Judith	15 Aug 1647	Do.
Susanna Voss	christening	John & Phillis	20 Aug 1655	Do.
Katharine Voss	christening	John & Jane	19 May 1678	Do.
Mary Voss	christening	John	21 Jan 1682	Do.
Mary Voss	christening	John & Elizabeth	27 Jun 1689	Do.
Francis Vaux	christening	John & Elizabeth	27 Jun 1698	Do.
Samuel Vause	christening	Robert & Alice	13 Dec 1637	St. Lawrence Jewry & St. Mary Magdalene
Robert Vause	christening	Robert & Alice	10 Nov 1639	Do.
Mary Vause	christening	Robert & Alice	23 Feb 1642	Do.
Mary Vawce	christening	John	11 Jun 1644	Do.
Elizabeth Vawce	christening	Samuel & Anne	2 May 1662	Do.
Samuel Vaus	christening	Samuel & Anne	20 Dec 1663	Do.
Robert Vaus	christening	Robert & Mary	16 Dec 1647	St. Olave Silverstreet, London

Figure 10: Some London parish Records Pertaining to Vaulx

As James's oldest son and heir, Francis would have inherited his father's estate. This means the other brothers would have to look elsewhere for a livelihood. Many younger sons of the gentry often turned to the clergy as a profession or entered into indentures to learn a trade. Horsfall reports that, according to Dr. James's will, all his sons got handsome inheritances from him and these would have helped the other sons along the way. One son, Robert, whom will be discussed in detail in a later sec-

tion was in fact indentured to learn the merchant trade.¹⁶ His indenture was entered on 29 Nov 1628, and the master's name was Richard Helliend, described as a merchant. According to its terms, it was to run for nine years and the apprentice was to have "sufficient apparel at the end." Based on his baptismal date, Robert would have been about thirteen years old when he began the apprenticeship and twenty-one when it ended in 1637. As will be seen, Robert Vaulx was frequently referred to in the Virginia records as a merchant of London.

We also know that his brothers Thomas and Humphrey were also in London as late as 1647. In that year, Thomas was referred to as "Thomas Vause of London, chirurgeon." In fact, there are a number of London parish records which may possibly relate to the sons or other descendants or relatives of James Vaulx "medicus." The name in several variants appears in the records of St. Dunstan Stepney and in other London parishes. Figure 8 is a table with a compilation of a few of these records.

Vaulx Family of Virginia and Maryland

Introduction

The names Robert, Thomas and Humphrey Vaulx, along with others named Vaus, Vaulx &c., begin to appear in Virginia in the second quarter of the seventeenth century. Of these three, Robert was apparently the first to settle in Virginia as his name begins to show up there as early as 1642. There is strong circumstantial evidence that all three of these men are brothers, and very likely the sons of James Vaulx "medicus" of Wiltshire. The names Alice, James, John, and Susannah also appear in the Virginia records, and they too are probably connected with this same family. In fact, as has been seen, James Vaulx of Wiltshire had daughters named Alice and Susannah.

Robert Vaulx, Merchant of London and Virginia

Robert Vaulx first appears in the Virginia land records in August 1642, when he patented 1,200 acres on the north bank of the York River on Porpotanke (alias) Fresh Water Creeke in Gloucester, County, "near land of Captain (Ralph) Wormeley." In this record, his name is spelled "Vaus." As will be seen later, a Bertram Obert patented 650 acres adjacent to Vaus on 10 Oct 1642—the same year as Robert Vaulx—and this Obert family was related by marriage to a John Vause of Middlesex County, Virginia, suggesting the possibility of some connection.

¹⁶ A. C. Merson (ed.), *A calendar of Southampton apprenticeship registers, 1609-1740*, p. 168.

On 18 Sep 1642, shortly after Robert Vaulx patented his 1,200 acres, he is listed as the creditor in Virginia of James Stone, merchant of London. By 1646, the same James Stone calls him “Robert Vaulx, merchant of Virginia.”

The exact location of Vaulx’ 1,200 acres is not certain. However, Poropotank Creek forms the boundary between the present-day Virginia counties of Gloucester and King and Queen, so this land was certainly located in one or both of them. In any case, because of a loss of records for these two counties, it is not possible to trace the subsequent disposition of the entire 1,200 acres. However, there is a record of 30 Sep 1654 in which one Richard Wilchin is listed as the grantee of 300 acres in Gloucester County on the northeast side of Poropotank Creek, adjoining the land of John Thomas and Mr. Vaus, and running to a creek dividing this land and the land of Mr. Canho and Mr. Vaus. According to the patent, 200 acres of this land was due by virtue of a bill of sale from Mrs. Elizabeth Vaus, the attorney of Robert Vaus, and confirmed by Mr. Humphrey Vaus and Mr. Croshaw.¹⁷ The other 100 acres was due to Wilchin for transporting himself and his wife, Rachel, into Virginia. There is a further record of this 300 acre tract in the Virginia land patent books that shows it was granted to Roger Gregory on 28 Apr 1711, when it was described as 300 acres of escheated land late in the possession of Richard Wilchin, deceased.¹⁸ This would probably be Col. Roger Gregory of King and Queen County, the son of Richard Gregory and his wife Frances. Col. Gregory married Mildred (Washington) Lewis, the widow of John Lewis. There is also a 28 Apr 1691 patent to Richard Gregory of New Kent County for 400 acres of land and marsh, called escheat land that was formerly granted to William Canhoe, clerk—the term “clerk” was used in the early days to mean a minister, or cleric.¹⁹

There is a reference to “Mr. Robert Vaus and his familie” in a York County court record from ca. 1644, and reads as follows:²⁰

“Whereas there was due to Thomas x x x x the court doth therefore order that x x x collect the said tob (tobacco) and corne from the said fowerteene Mr. Robert Vaus and his familie . . . Which tob is to be disposed of for the other publique uses and servis already done by men whoe have as yet not been appointed payment for there said servis Vizt to Robert Halsey in the first place his sallery due for his servis done in 1644 at the Midle plantation Garrison.”

¹⁷ The term “attorney” is often used in the old records and simply means the person has a legal power of attorney to act for the person named, for example by executing a deed.

¹⁸ In *The Virginia Genealogist*, vol. 21, pp. 28-29, there is a record from old New Kent County that mentions a jury that met 2 Sep 1675 at the house of Mr. John Sheers in Stratton Major Parish. According to the record, Richard “Willekin,” late of Stratton Major Parish, died seized of 200 acres in the said parish and that he made no will nor did he convey the property to anyone, so the land escheated to the King.

¹⁹ This name appears in multiple variants including Cainho, Cannhoe and Cainhoe. He was a cleric or minister. In England, a William Cainho, who graduated A. B. from Cambridge University in 1595, served as rector at Little Woolston, Buckinghamshire, from 1595 until 1649, and could be a relation.

²⁰ *Virginia Colonial Records*, vol. III, p. 26 “York County, 1633-1646, no. 2, p. 74.

Robert Vaulx was christened in Oct 1615 according to records presented earlier, and would have been about 27 years old by the time he arrived in Virginia, so it is possible he had a wife and children when he came. On the other hand, the use of the term “familye” could simply be a reference to one or more of Robert’s siblings, Thomas and Humphrey Vaulx, who are discussed later. In fact, there is a York County record of 10 Mar 1645/6 which relates to the estate of a Thomas Smallcombe. It notes that the estate was indebted to several individuals. One entry reads “To Mr. Robert Vaus for Mr. Thomas Vaus.”

Robert Vaulx acquired land in York County in 1647. The records show that on 17 Feb 1647, he was a grantee of 400 acres in York County upon Queens Creek and bounding along Hartwells Creek south and extending. This is likely the 400 acres that Tobias Frere and “Mr. Robert Vause” bought on 17 Sep 1647 from John Hartwell located on Queens Creek bounding along Hartwells Creek and Maiden Swamp Creek, described as part of a 650 acre grant assigned to Vause and Tobias Frere, and by Nicholas Jernew, attorney of said Frere, “wholly assigned to said Vause.” Mr. Robert Vaulx also patented 300 acres in York County on the south side of York River and north side of Queens Creek, 105 acres of which he acquired as administrator of Mr. James Stone.

Philip Bruce, in his *Economic History of Virginia in the Seventeenth Century*, discusses English merchants who supplied the Virginia planters with manufactured articles and names several of those that resided in the colony, at least for a while. They included Francis Lee, John Chew, Thomas Burbage, Robert Vaulx, and John Greene. Bruce also remarks that, in some instances, the merchants returned to England, as was the case with Vaulx, Lee, and Greene. In addition, he reports that in Dec 1647, the records of York County show that Robert Vaulx, merchant, purchased from Ralph Wormeley forty hogsheads of tobacco for £200 on the Royal Exchange London, and conveyed a large estate to secure the payment, the property, however, to go back to him on condition that he delivered the £200 on the Royal Exchange, London, within forty days after the arrival of the ship “*Desire*” at that port, or upon the first day of the following May, whichever should come first.

On 3 Jan 1647/8, Robert Vaus of Virginia, merchant, gave a power of attorney to “my Loveing Brother Tho. Vause and Lewis Burwell both of the same place” to collect debts and settle accounts in Virginia. It was signed by Robert Vaus and witnessed by Humphry Vause and George Butler. This indicates that Robert very likely returned to England about this time. However, he may have returned to Virginia again because the York County records show that, on 10 Jul 1651, he was the grantee of 150 acres in York County on south side of Queen Creek “adjoining another tract of land of said Vaus and along the land of Captain Taylor.”

Robert Vaux refers to Lewis Burwell as his “Loveing Brother” because it is said Vaux married Elizabeth Burwell, Lewis Burwell’s sister. There is a substantial amount of published information on the Burwell and Wingate families. It shows that Elizabeth Burwell descends from the Burwells of Harlington, Bedfordshire, England. Her grandfather was Edmund, or Edward Burwell, who was born ca. 1558 and buried 19 Nov 1623. He married Jane Wingate, a sister of Roger Wingate, who was the first treasurer of the Colony of Virginia.

It seems Elizabeth Burwell immigrated to Virginia in 1643, when she was listed as a headright along with her brothers George, William, and Lewis. Figure 10 is a pedigree of the Wingate family of Ampthill, Bedfordshire showing the connection to the Burwell family. It indicates that Jane Wingate married Edmund Burwell of Harlington. Their son, Edward Burwell, christened 24 Aug 1579, married Dorothy Bedell, daughter of William Bedell. After the death of Edward Burwell, his relict married Roger Wingate. Edward Burwell and Dorothy were the parents of Edward, Dorothy, Elizabeth, who married Robert Vaulx, and Lewis Burwell, who immigrated to Virginia and married Lucy Higginson.²¹

Some sources claim that Elizabeth’s sister, Dorothy, married a Woodington, and there are several records that add support this conjecture. In fact, it seems a near certainty there was some family relationship between the Vaulx and Woodington families. For example, one Virginia court record of 6 Oct 1657 shows Elizabeth, wife of Robert Vaulx, conveying land to John and Charles Woodington. It notes that Elizabeth Vaulx, by virtue of a Commission “given unto mee by my said husband under his hand and seale dated in England 7 September 1656,” gives to “my well beloved Kinsmen John Woodington and Charles Woodington,” 400 acres at Potomacke, part of a tract of 6000 acres between Rapahanock and Potomack Rivers. Viz: 200 acres to each of them on South side of the Divident, which lieth on the Potomack running parallel to the river, etc.” The deed was signed Elizabeth Vaulx and witnessed by Henry and Mary Ludlow. It was recorded by Elizabeth on 26 Oct 1656. This tract of land was on the Potomack River in present day Westmoreland County, Virginia, part of a tract called “Vaulxland” that will be mentioned elsewhere in this report.

There is also a York County, Virginia record in which Charles Woodington is referred to by Humphrey Vaulx as his “cousin,” again strongly suggesting a family connection. Horsfall cites several sources that claim Dorothy Burwell was baptized at Ampthill, Bedfordshire on 24 Jun 1618, and mar-

21 There is chancery case referenced in the Public Records Office of London called *Jarvis v. Wingate*. The plaintiff was Martha Jarvis, spinster, and defendants were Francis Wingate, John Vaux, Edmund Wingate and Richard Tavernor. The case involved money matters and Middlesex, England, which is the London area. It consists of a bill and two answers and is dated 1649. The probate acts in the Prerogative court of Canterbury also mention the administration to John Vaux Esq., Edmund Wingate (of Ampthill) Esq., and Richard Taverner gent, dated 20 Aug 1642 (103 Campbell). A son, Francis Wingate, is also mentioned. The Taverner or Tavernor family was also prominent in early Virginia.

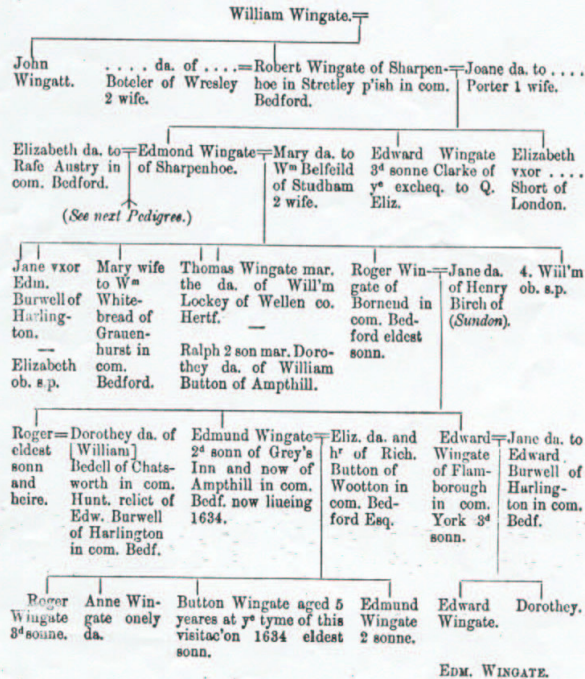
ried a Woodington, but no proof of this has yet been found by the writer. More will be said about the Woodington family later on in this section.

On 9 Jun 1654, Robert Vaus received a patent for 550 acres in York County. The record reads: “Richard Bennett, Esqr., Governor, etc. grants Mr. Robert Vaus 550 acres in the County of York on Queens Creek. Bounded vizt: 400 acres part thereof along Hartwells Creek S., S.W., thence W. upon the land formerly Mr. Bouth’s, divided from this land by Maiden Swamp Creek adjoining other land of said Vaus and along the land of Capt Taylor Esqr. S. by W. leading along the Vaine Spring on the E. side thereof upon the land of Richard Jones and thence W. by N. to the Mayden Swamp and down the swamp to the first mentioned land of Vause. The said land formerly granted to the Robert Vause in 2 patents, the 400 acres first mentioned on 17 Sept. 1647. And the 150 acres by patent dated 10 July 1651.” This patent was recorded 24 Aug 1655. On the following page of the York County deed book is a note that “Robert Vaux of Queens Creek in Hampton Parish, merch, assigns land in foregoing patent to Jerom Ham Gent, he to enter on the land 10 Oct next.” Dated 26 Jun 1654, it is signed Robt Vaux. The witnesses were Robert Bouth, Henry Belgrave, and Humphrey Vaux. The record also notes: “Againe acknowledged in court the 24th of Apr 1657(?) by Mrs. Francis (sic) Vaux wife of Robt Vaux. Recognit in Cur Com. Ebor by Humphrey Vaux 24 Aug: 1655 and Recorded.” No explanation has been found that would clarify who this Mrs. Frances Vaulx could be nor, indeed, the Robert Vaux, her husband. About this same time, Robert Vaulx, merchant, gave a power of attorney to “my well beloved friend” Thomas Broughton to collect accounts in the “Counties of Northumberland, Lancaster, or Westmoreland.” This was signed by Robert Vaulx and witnessed by Charles Edmunds and Christopher Roberts. The letters of attorney were dated 24 Jun 1654 and recorded on 20 Jul 1655.

Wingate

[of Amphill].

ARMS (TWO SHIELDS).—1, *Sable, a bend ermine cotised between six martlets or, WINGATE. II., Quarterly—1 and 4, WINGATE; 2 and 3, Azure, a fesse between three gouttes & or, BELVERGE. In the centre point an escutcheon: Ermine, on a fesse . . . a mullet gules, BUTTON.*
 CRESTS.—1, *A greyhound's head or, gorged with two bars-gemelles sable; 2, A gale or, a crescent for difference.**



* "This crest did belong to Edward Wingate Clarke of the Check to him onely and no other of his family."

Figure 11. Pedigree of Wingate of Amphill, Bedfordshire taken in 1634

Robert Vaulx patented his first tract of land in Westmoreland County, Virginia in 1655. The land books note that Vaulx, with Major William Gooch as a co-partner, patented 6,000 acres of land and it was out of this tract that Robert's wife, Elizabeth, conveyed 400 acres to the Woodingtons. Gooch died on 29 Oct 1655 and was buried in York County, Virginia near Temple Farm (discussed later), where his tombstone still stands. Following Gooch's death, Vaulx re-patented this 6,000 acres in his own name on 1 Mar 1656. He re-patented the same land again on 24 Mar 1662. There is a further record of this tract in the records of the Virginia Council which record that, at a general court held 21 Nov 1671, the following order was issued: "Whereas Mr. Robert Vaulx hath a patent for six thousand acres of land in Westmoreland County behind the Clifts of Corowoman, and Since the great Gust the beginning

corner tree is not to be found, It is ordered upon the petition of said Vaulx that a qualified Surveyor with the ancient Inhabitants lay out the said Vaulx his land according to his patent and in regards the said corner tree is not to be found it is ordered that they begin opposite to Mr. Tho: Broughton's land according to patent and the neighborhood to have notice of the tyme of the survey."

It appears that Robert Vaulx had at least two sons, Robert and James Vaulx, and possibly other children as well. The former settled in Westmoreland County on Virginia's northern neck, where his father had patented the 6,000 acres mentioned earlier. A short sketch of this son, Robert Vaulx, will be given next before continuing with the discussion of Robert the emigrant and a sketch of his other son, James of York River.

Robert Vaulx of Westmoreland County, Virginia

The records document that Robert Vaulx, merchant of Virginia and London, had a son, also named Robert, designated as Robert II in this sketch. He was born about 1651 according to an age given in a deposition, and died in 1685, leaving his father surviving him in London.

Robert II was a prominent landholder and Justice of the court in Westmoreland County, Virginia, where he lived on Pope's Creek. Probate of his will is mentioned in the Westmoreland County order books, but the will itself has now been lost.

His first wife, Mary Foxhall, outlived her husband and went on to marry again four more times: first to Alexander Gorges, then Edward Duddleston, then Caleb Butler and, finally, to the Rev. John Bagge. Caleb Butler had a daughter, Jane Butler, who became the first wife of Augustine Washington and mother of Lawrence and Augustine Washington, Jr., half-brothers to President George Washington.

Robert II is mentioned by David Eaton in his *Historical Atlas of Westmoreland County, Virginia*. According to Eaton, his father gave him his 6,000 acres in Westmoreland County. Soon after the death of Robert II, it seems a dispute over this land arose and his wife, Mary, who, since the death of her husband, had married Alexander Gorges, complained to the court. In response, the Westmoreland court issued an order on 19 Nov 1685, which reads as follows:

"Ordered that William Horton, surveyor, survey 6,000 acres patented by Robert Vaulx, June 9, 1655, in accordance with the petition of Mary Vaulx, now Gorges, and no surveyor to enter upon said land without consent of Mr. Robert Vaulx of London, merchant, now represented by his brother, Mr. Humphrey Vaulx, who appeared in court this day. It seems that Mrs. Mary Gorges complained to the court that some persons had confederated to deprive her of the 6,000 acres (called Vaulxland) and on which 'her husband had long lived.'"

Eventually, this 6,000 acre came into the possession of the prominent Fitzhugh family of Virginia. It is mentioned in the will of William Fitzhugh of Stafford County, Virginia, dated 9 Apr 1700, which can be found in the *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*.²² The first paragraph of the will reads as follows:

“To eldest son William all that tract called Vaulx land, in Westmoreland, containing 6,000 acres; a tract on Nominy (Creek) in Westmoreland containing 475 acres; another tract adjoining Vaulx land at the head of Pope’s Creek, containing 250 acres, also one half of a tract of 21,996 acres in Stafford, patented by me, lying above Occoquan; also to William the land I live on in Stafford, 1,000 acres, reserving one half of this land to my wife for her life.”

The Vaulxland tract was sold by the family to small land holders. However, a large piece, consisting of 2,643 acres, was later owned by George Washington Parke Custis (1781-1857), the step-grandson of President Washington. In 1834, Custis had this tract subdivided into small holdings and sold.

On 31 Jan 1707, in obedience to another order of the Westmoreland County court, a John Quisenberry was deposed in regard to a matter pertaining to the boundaries of Vaulxland. A copy of this deposition is included in the same issue of the *Virginia Magazine* and included in Eaton’s discussion of the Vaulx family of Westmoreland.²³

“WESTMORELAND COUNTY, VIRGINIA: Ss.—John Quisenberry, aged 80 yeas or thereabouts, being examined and sworn upon the Holy Evangelists of God, doth say that about 50 years ago (ca. 1657) Mrs. Wingate a nigh relation to old Mrs. Vaulx, her husband (that first took up the said land called “Vaulxland”) being in England, came up to the said Wingate’s with surveyors and seated the plantation now called “Vaulx Quarter.” Your deponent desired the said Wingate to speak to Mrs. Vaulx to sell him part of the said land, who seemed to be willing and sent up the patent with orders to Mr. William Horton to lay out the same, who did forthwith lay out the same at the time aforesaid; and your deponent went with the said surveyor in the laying out the said land, and well remembers y’t y’r (yet, your) deponent did help to make the line next to Potomac river, or part thereof, which took in the plantation of Vaulx Quarters, and likewise the line of fifteen hundred poles, and the next line, next to Rappahannock river, which included a plantation formerly seated by one Mr. Lane, since Allen Mountjoy; and further saith not. //A. S. Quisenberry.”

22 See *Virginia Historical Magazine*, vol. ii (January 1895), p. 276.

23 *Ibid.*, p. 427.

This deposition was witnessed by Lewis Markham, Caleb Butler, and Andrew Monroe, and recorded 25 Feb 1707 in the Westmoreland County court. The mention of Mrs. Wingate being a nigh, i.e. close, relation of Mrs. Vaulx is further confirmation of the Vaulx-Wingate-Burwell connection discussed previously.

Robert and Mary (Foxhall) Vaulx had three children before his death: Robert III, James, and Elizabeth. James died unmarried, and his will devised his property to his sister, Elizabeth Craddock, brother-in-law Richard Craddock, and sister, Jane Butler. Elizabeth Vaulx married three times. Her first husband was Captain Richard Craddock. Before February 1697/98 she was married to Daniel Porten. Her third and last husband was Col. George Eskridge, whom she married about 1715. Eskridge later became the guardian of Mary Ball, who married Augustine Washington, George's father.

Robert III, who was born about 1680, married some time before July 1711 to Elizabeth, daughter of Rodham Kenner, and widow of Richard Bushrod. Robert III dated his will 30 Nov 1721:

“I Robert Vaulx of Washington parish in the County of Westmoreland, sick & weak in body . . . First I give and bequeath all my land that I hold of the patent called Vaulxes (adjacent) to my (forest) Plantacon unto my two sons Robert and James to be equally divided between them reserving unto my son James his first Choice after such division is made—2ndly I give and bequeath unto my son Robt. Vaulx the plantacon at the head of Popes Creek whereon I now live with all the land thereunto appertaining—3rdly the remainder of my real and personal estate to be equally divided between my beloved wife Eliza Vaulx and my three children—Beloved wife Eliza Vaulx to be executrix and my two friends Augustine Washington and Richard Kenner Exors of this my last Will.”

Robert III and Elizabeth (Kenner) Vaulx had sons Robert IV and James. Robert IV (ca. 1710-1755) married Sarah Elliott and then Elizabeth Storke. He lived in Cople Parish, Westmoreland County, on a tract of land that is probably the same one patented by Thomas Vaulx on 15 Oct 1650. This Thomas Vaulx was a brother to Robert, merchant of Virginia and London, and is discussed in a later section. Robert IV and Sarah had several children, including Molly, Milly, Katy, Kenner, Elizabeth (Betty) and Sarah (Sally) Vaulx. The records of King George County, Virginia contain reference to the marriage of a Katy Vaulx to William Barkhead, in Dec 1768, and also that of Peggy Vaulx to John Skinker, in April 1772. They may be children of Robert IV.

Returning to a discussion of Robert Vaulx of London and Virginia, it appears he was in England on 6 Sep 1656 when the High court of Admiralty in London entered a copy of a power of attorney by which “Robert Vaulx of London merchant” appointed his wife Elizabeth his agent to collect all debts, tobacco, beaver, goods &c., owing to him in Virginia. This power of attorney was signed, sealed, and

dated at in the presence of Thomas Bowler, Rowland Griffith, Roger Dixon, and Robert Murchard, a notary public.

Even though he was no longer in Virginia, Vaulx continued to accumulate land there, and on 10 Apr 1657, he was a grantee of 330 acres in York County. The tract was described as being on the south side of the York River, but the north side Queens Creek, “bounded as Followeth: with Parkusse’s gut or small creek, on the east side of the Channel Queens Creek.”

Not long after, we find that, at a court held in York County in May 1658, John Rose, described as chirurgeon of London, acknowledged that he was indebted to Robert Vaulx of London, merchant, in the sum of £130 of money of England, “to be paid on the 1st day of August ensuing.”

On 16 Nov 1657, Vaulx was granted an additional 2,000 acres in Westmoreland County on the south side of Potomack Creek, “beginning 320 poles up from the mouth of said Creek.” It appears, however, that Vaulx did not seat this tract because, on 1 Oct 1663, Peter Jennings of Gloucester County, Gent., conveyed it to Richard Heabeard (?Hubbard), William Heabeard, John Heabeard, Thomas Humphreys, and John Keich for 10,000 pounds of tobacco. It was described as 2,000 acres on the south side of Potomack River and on the south side of Potomack Creeke “late the land of Mr. Robert Vaulx and by him deserted and afterwards granted unto me by patent, which land is now in the occupation of Richard Heabeard, William Heabeard, John Heabeard, Thos. Humphreys and John Keech and others.” This deed was witnessed by Gerrard Fowke and John Webb, and was acknowledged on 28 Oct 1663 by Col. Gerrard Fowke, attorney of Peter Jennings.

The records of York County indicate that Elizabeth Vaulx, wife of Robert, traveled from Virginia back to England in 1659. This is proved by a power of attorney she executed on 6 May 1659 to Mr. Robert Bourne of York County, for herself and for her husband Robert. In it, she states that she was bound upon a voyage for England this present year in the ship “*William & John*,” Capt. Richard Holman, commander. The letter of attorney was witnessed by Humphrey Vaulx, Daniel Smith, and Thomas Ballard. Evidently, Elizabeth traveled to London on the “*William & John*” with Thomas Ludlow of York County. This is discovered from a 3 May 1659 power of attorney given by Ludlow in which he states: “I Thomas Ludlow of York County, Virginia, Gent., intend on a voyage to England this present year in the ship “*William and John*,” Richard Holman, Commander, and leaving several accounts, debts and bills, and I as attorney of John Crey of London, Merchant, for same constitute Cuthbert Mullineux my attorney . . . I appoint my friend Thomas Ballard attorney for Mr. Cuthbert Mullineux.” This was witnessed by Humphrey Vaulx and John Woodington.

As has already been seen, there was a close relationship among the Vaulx, Woodington, and Ludlow families. In his will, James Vaulx “*medicus*” of Wiltshire, England refers to his “daughter” Alice

Woodington. This is presumably his daughter Alice who was christened 28 Oct 1603, but it could be a reference to a “daughter-in-law” as that term was used in the old records. In Bigland’s *An Original History of the City of Gloucester*, there is reference to an Alice Woodington in an epitaph in the cathedral in that city that reads: “Arms: in a lozenge a bend checky. Alice, the wife of John Woodington, of London, Gent. died Aug. 11, 1651.”²⁴ According to vol. 5 of the *Probate Acts of the Prerogative court of Canterbury*, the will of Alice Woodington of Gloucester, widow, was proved 21 Oct 1651 by a daughter, Mary Woodington (200 *Grey*). It is likely that Alice’s husband, referred to as “John Woodington, of London, Gent.” is the man whose will appears in the records of the Prerogative court of Canterbury and styled John Woodington of the Parish of Saint Botolph without Aldersgate, London. It is dated 5 May 1649 and was proved by his relict, Alice Woodington, 19 Jul 1650 (56 *Pembroke*). The burial records of the church show that Woodington was buried on 25 Jul 1649. The last appearance of the name Woodington the writer has found so far is a note of 23 May 1682 of the *Minutes of the Council of Virginia*: “Order for the suspension of John Woodington as a Justice of the peace, and for his committal to custody in consequence of his behavior in respect of the riots.” This comes from the *Calendar of State Papers Colonial Series, America and West Indies* (1681-1685). The context for this short note is not known.

The English records also contain reference to several Woodington family members who resided in Gloucester, England, mainly in the village of Down Ampney. This is notable because, as can be seen from the map shown in Figure 5, Down Ampney is a close neighbor to both Meysey Hampton and Marston Meysey, where James “medicus” lived and attended church. The Gloucester records contain wills for the following individuals, all of Down Ampney: George Woodington (1606), Edith Woodington (1614), Francis Woodington (1626), and Alice Woodington (1639). There are also several individuals by the name Woodington who were in London in the seventeenth century. For example, the following children of John and Anne Woodington were christened at St. Andrew, Holborn, London: Anne (19 Dec 1652), Elizabeth (18 Jun 1654), Rebeckah (30 Sep 1655), John (21 Jun 1657), and Mary (13 Apr 1659). They are, perhaps, related to John Woodington, of London, Gent., who was the husband of Alice, who died in 1651. The register of the Merchant Taylors’ School in London notes that a William Woodington entered that school on 11 Sep 1635. The records of Lancaster County, Virginia contain a power of attorney given by John Woodington of “Warrany (Warreneye) in the County of New Kent in Virginia” to Thomas Hunter to acknowledge the sale of land in Lancaster patented by Woodington 15 Jan 1658/59.

24 The National Archives of Britain contain a copy of the will of John Woodington, Gentleman of Saint Botolph without Aldersgate, City of London. It is dated 19 Jul 1650. He may be the husband of Alice who died in 1651.

Thomas Ludlow, the man mentioned earlier, was the nephew of George Ludlow of York County, Virginia, Esq., who left a will 8 Sep 1655. In it, Ludlow leaves his entire estate in Virginia to his nephew, Thomas, described as the eldest son of brother Gabriel Ludlowe, Esq., deceased. This estate included a 1/16th part of the ship “*Mayflower*,” which Ludlow says he bought of Mr. Samuel Harwar of London, merchant. The will also gives authority to Mr. William Allen of London, merchant, and Mr. John Gray “who lives at the Green Man on Ludgate Hill” authority to receive debts from Mr. Samuel Harwar at the Sun and Harp in Milk Street, London, and from any others.²⁵ There is a York County indenture of 25 Jan 1657 between William Munford, attorney of Mr. Samuel Harwar, Citizen and Merchant Tailor of London, and Henry Tiler (?Tyler) of Middle Plantation Parish in York County, Virginia, Gent., for 4,000 pounds of tobacco. The subject of the deed is “half a plantation at Queens Creek in York Co., lately belonging to Samuel Torquinton, Citizen & Grocer of London, as brother and heir and executor of the will of Joseph Torquinton, dec’d, purchased of said Samuel Torquinton by said Samuel Harwar as by deed 14 May 1653, signing over to said Tiler all buildings, etc. and all stocks of cattle.” In regard to the name Harwar, it should be noted that there was a Vincent Vass (also spelled Vaus and Vause in the records), who appears in the records of Middlesex and old Rappahannock (Essex) County, Virginia in the 1680s. He is connected with a Harwar family there, including a Thomas and Samuel Harwar. Research indicates there was likely a relationship of the Samuel Harwar of London to the Harwar family of Essex County. In fact, it is probable that the Samuel and Thomas Harwar who appear in the records of Essex County, Virginia are sons of the merchant Samuel Harwar of London. In any case, Sir Edmund Ludlow had a brother Thomas Ludlow (born ca. 1560) and a sister Margaret Ludlow that married a man by the name of Robert Vaux whose relationship to Robert of London and Virginia is not known, but it seems probable there is one. Vincent Vass of old Rappahannock, later Essex County, will be discussed in more detail later in this report.

It has been previously noted that William Gooch, who patented land with Robert Vaulx, was buried in York County, Virginia on land near “Temple Farm,” whose history is connected with the Ludlow family. There is a York County deed of 6 Nov 1686 from John Willes of Culford, Suffolk, clerk, and Elizabeth his wife, and Peter Temple of Sible Heningham, Essex, clerk, and Mary his wife, who conveyed to Lawrence Smith of York County, Virginia, the land in York County that Thomas Ludlow had inherited from his uncle, George Ludlow. After the death of Thomas Ludlow, his widow married Rev. Peter Temple and they occupied the property at the time of its transfer to the Smiths. Major Law-

²⁵ The parish of St. Mary Magdalen is discussed in *the Historical gazetteer of London before the Great Fire*. Included is mention of a house there: “In 1661 the occupants were Christopher Husse and Samuel Harwar; Hussey paid £20 rent from 1660 to 1664; the tenant from then to the Fire was either John Salmon or Mr. Sturges. During all this period, except for the Interregnum, the £2 quit-rent to St. Paul’s had been paid by the churchwardens of St. Mary Magdalen Milk Street.

rence Smith named this land "Temple Farm." Temple Farm was conveyed to his son, Colonel Lawrence Smith, and then passed on to Colonel Lawrence Smith's son, Robert, who sold the land to Augustine Moore, husband of his sister, Lucy Smith. The deed was acknowledged 20 Feb 1769. Augustine Moore of York left his estate to Gen. Thomas Nelson, subject to the life estate of his wife. As an interesting sidebar, the articles of surrender following the Revolutionary War battle of Yorktown were signed in 1781 in the old Smith Mansion, then occupied by Augustine Moore, and now known as "Moore House." It still stands on the national battlefield at Yorktown, Figure 11. From this discussion, it can be deduced that Thomas Ludlow, Robert Vaulx, and Maj. William Gooch all owned land in the vicinity of present-day Yorktown Virginia.



Figure 12: Moore House on Temple Farm, Yorktown, Virginia

According to information contained in the *Valentine Papers* at the Virginia State Library, the name Daniel Smith, mentioned earlier as a witness to a power of attorney given by Elizabeth Vaulx to Robert Bourne, appears in a record of 31 Oct 1661. The reference is to a case, *Daniel Smith plaintiff vs. William Crump*, who is described as "attorney of Rebecca Vaulx decd." The court directed that the said Daniel Smith be "paid his freedom and corn (his freedom and clothes being already paid) and that he take some books, writings, and other things, which "he brought into ye country with him be delivered him with costs of suit at execution." This suit appears again in another transcription of this case that reads "where, in a difference between Daniel Smith and William Crump, attorney of Mr. Robert Vaulx, the court 'ordered that said Daniel be paid his freedom corn (freedom clothes being already paid) and that his Inkhorne, books, writings and other things he brought into this country be delivered to him.'"²⁶ An unanswered question is who is this Rebecca Vaulx? Horsfall suggests that she may have

²⁶ An inkhorn or ink horn is a small container made of horn or a similar material, formerly used to hold ink for writing.

been a wife of Humphrey Vaulx though there is no evidence to support this conjecture. She could also have been a daughter of Robert or one of the other Vaulx brothers.

There is also the question of what became of Elizabeth, the wife of Robert Vaulx, merchant of Virginia and London. According to Bruton Parish records, there is a reference to the 14 Feb 1662 burial of an Edward Tapper, described as a “servant to Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx.” Then, on 28 Sep 1663, it is noted in these same records that a John Davis was buried, and he is described as “servant to Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx, deceased.” This would seem to indicate that this Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx died some time between 14 Feb 1662 and 28 Sep 1663.²⁷ There is a further note in the Bruton records that states that on 5 Oct 1665, Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx “departed,” presumably meaning she died. Are these two different ladies, both described as “Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx?”

In fact, there is reason to believe that the Elizabeth, wife of Robert of London, and mother of James Vaulx who married Elisheba, is the one who died 5 Oct 1665. The clue comes from the *Minutes of the Council and General court of Virginia* (McIlwain, 1979). On 26 May 1671 there is this entry: “Capt. Xrofer (Christopher) Wormley non suits James Vaulx noe decl being filed according to Law it is ordered he pay damages and costs according to Act also exec.” On 29 Mar 1672, this entry: “Ordered that ye cause in difference between James Vaulx atty of Robert . . . about ye balance of an account of £84.9.6 to be dismissed and that Vaulx shall pay costs of suit to Capt. John Carter also exec.” And finally, on 5 Oct 1672, this entry: “The matter in difference between Thos. Ballard Esq. and Mr. James Vaulx concerning acct. due by **Mrs. Vaulx his later mother** (emphasis added) to be stated from within 5-7 years before the said Mrs. Vaulx her death and Col. Corbyn and Col. Pate are by this court desired and authorized to state the accts and report how they find the same to balance.” If Elizabeth Vaulx, wife of Robert of London, died in 1665, then seven years from that date would be 1672 when this record appears in the minutes of the Council and General court of Virginia. So, these entries seem to relate to efforts by James Vaulx, her son, to complete the settlement of Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx’s estate. If this is correct, then there is a question regarding the other Elizabeth Vaulx who died in either 1662 or 1663. As will be seen in the discussion of Thomas Vaulx, brother to Robert of London, he had a wife in Virginia also named Elizabeth, so the lady who died in 1662 or 1663 may be Thomas’ wife.

Returning to the discussion of Robert Vaulx, merchant of London, we see that, by 16 Apr 1664, an Elizabeth Vaulx appeared in court to discharge William Gantlett from an old bill of his for 380 pounds of tobacco. This could be the wife of Robert of London. The discharge was witnessed by a James

²⁷ Two of the servants (Edward Tapper and Philip Watson) were transported to Virginia by Mr. William Crump, Mr. Charles Edmunds and Mr. Robert Whitehaire in exchange for 2700 acres in New Kent County “in the freshes of the York River.”

Vaulx, probable son of Robert of London. However, there is another reference to an Elizabeth Vaulx in the Virginia records on 20 Apr 1666 (after the death of the wife of Robert of London). In this instance she was acting as an attorney for Robert Vaulx in a court case against John Jaquis.²⁸ Her identity is not clear either. In any case, a few months later, we find Jaquis in court again as executor of Jeremiah Fisher, deceased, exhibiting an account for £5/5 due from Mary Hall to Fisher. In that case, Mary Hall was ordered to appear at the house of “Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx” on the 5th of September, before Capt. Daniell Parke and Mr. Mathew Huberd, and to testify under oath regarding the matter at issue.²⁹

Interestingly, there is a land patent given to Mr. John Scott of Bristol Parish, Charles City County, Virginia, on 21 Apr 1690, for the transportation of 15 persons including Thomas Jaquis and Thomas Voss. Who was this Thomas “Voss?” One possibility is that he is the man called “Thomas Vaux” who appears in the records of Middlesex County, Virginia when he, along with John Walker and William Downing, witnessed the will of William Daniel of Middlesex on 8 Oct 1694.³⁰ This William Daniel married Constance Vause, daughter of John Vause of Middlesex County, who will be discussed in more detail in a later section. Moreover, this William Daniel had a son, Richard Daniel, who died in Essex County in 1727. An inventory for Richard Daniel’s estate was returned 19 Sep 1727, and signed by William Daniel (Richard’s son). The witnesses were John Vass, William Brooke and Hugh Williams. The Brooke connection suggests that this John Vass is very probably the son of the previously mentioned Vincent Vass, who died in Essex County, Virginia, in 1727. There is another interesting entry in the register of Christ Church Parish in Middlesex County, Virginia. The transcribed entry reads: Thomas “Volve” dyed Jan 15 and was buried Jan 17 1715/16. The name “Volve” does not seem to appear in any other Virginia records, so it is quite possibly a transcription error, and the name may actually be Vaulx or Volve, or some similar variant. An examination of the original parish register might shed light on this. Finally, a Thomas Voss appears in the records of Talbot County, on Maryland’s Eastern Shore in the early 1700s. As will be seen, descendants of Robert Vaulx, merchant of Virginia and London, moved to the Eastern shore of Virginia and Maryland, so this Thomas could well be related to the Vaulx line as well.

On 20 Oct 1677, Robert Terrell of the City of London, merchant, wrote his will. It was proved 23 Nov 1677, and mentioned Mr. Robert Vaulx, merchant, as a friend and requested that he “be assisting

28 He may be the John Jakes or Jakues who appears as one of the headrights of Capt. Augustine Warner on 26 Oct 1652.

29 According to *Virginia Gleanings in England*, a Jerome Ham lived in York County, Virginia, and represented it in the House of Burgesses at the session of March 1657-58, and was J.P. 1656. His widow, Sibella, married secondly Mathew Hubard.

30 Bruce, in his *Social Life in Virginia in the Seventeenth Century* (p. 92) mentions a Thomas Vaulx who was a Justice of York County in 1670.

to (my) Executor in stating Virginia and other accounts.” This could imply that Vaulx was back in Virginia at this time, but it is more likely he was asking for help from Vaulx’s relatives and friends there.

It appears that about 1690, Robert Vaulx of London began to divest himself of his Virginia land holdings. For example, on 3 Dec 1690, as “Robert Vaulx of London, Merchant,” he executed a deed of lease and release to Peter Temple of London clerke for £130 lawful money of England. This was for 600 acres of land “att Queens Creeke in York County commonly called Vaulx land, according to the patents, deeds and grants of the same which were heretofore purchased by Robert Vaulx of Nicholas Jernew.” This deed was signed by Robert Vaulx and witnesses by William Sherwood and Guil. Scorey a notary public. The deed was acknowledged by Edmund Jenings, Esq. by virtue of a power of attorney. The Peter Temple, clerke, was, of course, the same Rev. Peter Temple mentioned earlier, who married the widow of Thomas Ludlow, and who owned land next to or very near Vaulx’s plantation on Queen’s Creek in York County.

There is another record of the same date (3 Dec 1690) that reads as follows: “Sir Thomas Pilkington, Knight, Lord Maior and the Aldermen or Senators of the City of London sent Greeting: In their Majesties’ court holden before us in the chamber of the Guild Hall of the said Citty appeared William Sherwood of James Towne in Virginia, Gent., now resident in the City of London, aged 49 or thereabouts, and William Scorey of London, Notary Publique, aged 44 or thereabouts, and deposed they saw Robert Vaulx of London, merchant, seale and deliver two deeds hereunto annexed, 1-2 Dec, of lands neare Queen’s Creek in York County in Virginia to Peter Temple of London, Clerke, and also the revocation of a letter of attorney made by Robert Vaulx to his brother Humphry Vaulx of Virginia for so much thereof as relates to the land and plantations aforesaid.”

A York court record of 2 Dec 1690 states: “Robert Vaulx of London, merchant, did by a letter of attorney, impower my loveing brother Humphry Vaulx of New Kent County, Gent., to receive all debts in Virginia and to sell, lease or dispose of any land, plantation or other reall estate in Virginia. I have sold to Peter Temple of London, Clerke, all my land at Queen’s Creek or any other part of the County of York by deeds bearing date with these presents and for that Peter Temple hath fully accounted with paid and satisfied me for all the stock of cattell being first putt on, being twenty cowes and a bull, with their increase, and this yeares crop and all other things to me belonging remaineing on the plantations (except one halfe of the increase of the stock to this time arriseing, not yet taken by Humphry Vaulx for the use of Robert Vaulx.”

At a court in York County on 24 Mar 1691/92, proceedings were held on a case involving the Temple and Vaulx families. The record reads: “Mr. Peter Temple Junr. attorney of Mr. Peter Temple Senr. having brought his action of trespasse against Arthur Lunn for that Lunn in 1686 leased of the

plaintiff quallified as aforesaid the said Peter Temple attorney his land and plantation lyeing att the mouth of Queenes Creeke in York County for three yeares from the date of the agreement at the rent of £1.4._ sterling. Lunn doth still unlawfull continue his possession of the land under the pretence of a lease made to him by Mr. Humphry Volx attorney of Mr. Robert Sale in England, which this court having inspected and the said Peter Temple produceing a firme and authenticke conveyance of the purchase of the land of Mr. Volx in England by Peter Temple Senior bearing date a considerable time before Mr. Humphry Volx letter of attorney, itt is the opinion of this court that Volx hath noe right or power to disturbe Arthur Lunn attorne tenant to Peter Temple attorney as aforesaid, paying him the yearly rent as itt shall arise and become due.”³¹

A subsequent York County court proceeding of 24 Jul 1691 involved a revocation of a power of attorney given by Robert Vaulx to his brother Humphrey: “Robert Vaulx doth hereby revoke the letter of attorney made to my brother Humphry Vaulx as relates to the land or plantations at Queen’s Creek and the crops and the remainder of the first stock of cattell putt on the plantation by Peter Temple or his order, and doe hereby appoint Edmund Jenings of York County, Esq. and William Edwards of James Citty, Gent. his attorneys to appeare in York County court and acknowledge these presents.” This was signed by Robert Vaulx and witnessed by William Sherwood and Guil. Scorey a notary. Acknowledgement was by Edmund Jenings Esqr. by virtue of a power given to him given as it is above expressed. This revocation was, of course, the same one which Vaulx executed earlier in London.

James and Elisheba Vaulx of York County, Virginia

On 10 Jun 1693, the York County records mention a Robert Vaulx of Dorchester County, Maryland. This also involved a power of attorney given to Mr. Peter Temple, whom Vaulx describes as “my very loveing cozen,” and was to allow Temple to acknowledge unto Arthur Lunn 500 acres according to bill of sale. The power of attorney was signed by Vaulx and witnessed by Richard Owens and Abraham Rawlinson. It was proved by Rawlinson on 24 Aug 1693. On the same day, Capt. Peter Temple, as attorney for Robert Vaulx of Dorchester County, appeared in York court on behalf of Vaulx who was described as “ye apparent heir to James Vaulx of York County, in Virginia, deceased”. The land in question sold to Lun(n) was described as joining upon Capt. Peter Temple and Edward Temple on the south side of Queen’s Creek. On the power of attorney, Vaulx signed by a mark. Witnesses to the pro-

31 Peter Temple had a son, Capt. Peter Temple of York County who married Anne, daughter of James Bray Esq., member of the Council of Virginia, and died in 1695. After Temple died in 1692, Anne (Bray) Temple married again, twice. Her second husband was Robert Booth, and her third husband, Mungo Inglis.

ceeding included John Haselwood, Rich. Owens, and Abraham Paulsen.³² The property that was the subject of the sale was probably part of the land owned by Robert Vaulx of London.

So, who was this Robert Vaulx of Dorchester County, Maryland, described as “ye apparent heir to James Vaulx” of York County? Horsfall, referencing an article in the *William and Mary Quarterly*, says that James Vaulx of York County married one Elisheba, last name unknown, and that they had a son Robert who moved to Dorchester County, Maryland, and that Elisheba married there one John Franke. Horsfall conjectures that the James Vaulx in question was a brother to Robert, Thomas, and Humphrey Vaulx. However, the writer believes the evidence proves that this James Vaulx of York County was a son of Robert Vaulx, merchant of London, and not his brother as evidenced by the efforts of a James Vaulx to settle his mother’s York County estate. If so, the Robert Vaulx of Dorchester was a grandson of Robert of London. Also, if he was indeed the apparent heir of James of York County, this would imply that Robert was the oldest son of James.

There are other York County records that mention Arthur Lun arresting Capt. Peter Temple as attorney of Robert Vaulx of Dorchester County in Maryland in an action of debt and “hee not appearing, order is granted against Capt. Thomas Ballard, High Sheriff, if he causeth not Peter Temple to appeare.” Also, the difference between Arthur Lun against Capt. Peter Temple as attorney of Robert Vaulx of Dorchester County in Maryland for £40 sterling upon a bond for performance of covenants in a deed of sale for land past by the defendant or that “he acknowledge the same is again referd att the defendant’s request to the next court, hee then expecting Vaulx personall appeareance to end the difference.” Subsequently, the records note that a “nonsuite is granted Mr. Peter Temple against Mr. Humph: Valx attorney Mr. Robt. Valx, hee not fileing his petition against him.”

It has been seen that Robert Vaulx of London was still alive on 3 Dec 1690, when he executed a deed of lease and release in London to Peter Temple of London. Moreover, it seems that the Vaulx family held land in New Kent County as late as 1704, since a quit rent of Virginia taken in that year mentions “land that the Persons lives out of the County,” including “Robb Valkes,” charged with 500 acres. This could be a reference to Robert of London, or to Robert of Dorchester or, possibly, to a Robert Vaulx of the Westmoreland County, Virginia line, but more probably to Robert of Dorchester County.

32 In one abstract of the York records, the name appears as Abraham Rawlinson and in another as Abraham Paulsen. Interestingly, there is a 20 Aug 1706 will of a John Wells of St. Mary’s White Chapel Parish, Lancaster County, Virginia. Witnesses included Abraham Paulsen, Miles Walters, and Mary Voss. A John Vaus, Vause, Voss also appears in the records of St. Mary’s White Chapel Parish in the late 1600s and early 1700s. His identity and that of Mary Voss are unknown; however, it is likely they are members of the Vaulx family discussed here and quite possibly children of James Vaulx, son of Robert of London.

The name James Vaulx appears in the records of York County on 16 Apr 1664 when he witnessed a document in which Elizabeth Vaulx discharged William Gantlett from a debt due under an old bill. This Elizabeth was the wife of Robert Vaulx, merchant of London.

But, who was this James Vaulx? As noted earlier, Horsfall suggested he was another son of James “medicus,” and therefore brother to Robert, Thomas, and Humphrey. The records show that James “medicus” did have a son named James, born ca. 1607/08. Other writers have also made this same assumption. For example, in a history of the Kenner family found in volume iii of the series, *Genealogies of Virginia Families*, the author has the following to say: “Robert Vaulx was a prominent merchant dealing with Virginia, and probably married Elizabeth Burwell, sister of Major Lewis Burwell, whom he calls ‘brother.’ He had three brothers, who came with him to Virginia: Humphrey, Thomas and James. James Vaulx was a Justice of York Col, Virginia, in 1670, and married Elizabeth ____, and son Robert removed to Dorchester Col, Maryland, where his mother married John Franke.”

Regardless, this writer believes it certain that the James Vaulx of York County was the son of Robert Vaulx, merchant of London and Virginia, and likely named for his grandfather, James “medicus,” or his uncle, James. The strongest evidence is the York County curt record involving Mr. James Vaulx concerning an account due by “Mrs. Vaulx, his later mother,” whose death is recorded in the Bruton Parish register as taking place on 5 Oct 1665. There is also evidence against Robert’s brother James, who was born in England, being the James who appears in York County records with a wife, Elisheba. This follows from the fact that Robert claimed to be the “heir at law” of his brother Thomas, who died intestate in the early 1650s. Had James been Thomas’ older brother and had he been living at the time of Thomas’ death, he and not Robert would have inherited Thomas’ property in accordance with the common law rules governing intestacy. But there is no evidence he took a share of the estate.

When did James first appear in the Virginia records? Horsfall cites an article in *William and Mary Quarterly* that says he immigrated in 1654, but this could be a mistaken reference to the 1664 date mentioned above. In fact, James’s name does not appear in the list of headrights compiled in the first three volumes of Nell Nugent’s *Cavaliers and Pioneers*. Moreover, a perusal of published abstracts of wills, deeds, and orders for York County does not reveal any reference to the name James Vaulx during the period 1657 though 1662. So, what are the facts?

On 10 Jan 1663, Matthew Broadley, goldsmith of London, appointed his “trusted friend,” James Vaulx of London, merchant, to “receive accounts for him in any part of Virginia.” Vaulx had a continuing relationship with Broadley as demonstrated by a 24 May 1667 York County record in which William Allin was ordered to pay James Vaulx, attorney for Mr. Robert Vaulx, 1,000 pounds of to-

bacco, and John Lawson was also ordered to pay James Vaulx in an action of Mr. James Vaulx, called attorney of Mr. Mathew Broadley. From this, it seems James Vaulx traveled to Virginia some time between 10 Jan 1663 and 24 May 1667. He was certainly there by 29 Jul 1669 when he, Thomas Ballard, and Philip Chesley helped administer the estate of Ralph Graves of York County, and probably before.

On 2 Aug 1670, James Vaulx was called my “loveing friend” of York County by Thomas Shamant of Upper Shadwell in the County of Middlesex, England, Mariner, who appointed James Vaulx of York River in Virginia, merchant and Zachary Taylor of Wapping in the County of Middlesex, England, Mariner, “his attornies to receive debts etc. in Virginia.”³³ Shamant and Vaulx appear together again in a York County record of 11 Sep 1671 in which “Mr. Jonathan Newell is ordered to pay Mr. James Vaulx, attorney of Capt. Thomas Shamant, £2, due by bill . . . with joint consent of Mr. James Vaulx plt. And Mr. William Crump, deft, Capt. Phillip Chesley and Mr. Richard Clarke are to examine and settle all accounts between them on 15 Oct next.”

The James Vaulx of York County, Virginia, merchant, mentioned by Thomas Shamant, is surely the same man as the James Voss “of Yeorke River” who appears in the records of old Rappahannock County, Virginia about 1667 or 1668. Moreover, there is strong evidence to link this James Voss or Vaulx to Robert Vaulx, merchant of London. The story begins with an indenture deed dated 11 Sep 1667 found in the records of old Rappahannock County (Essex County after 1692) between Roger Overton of the Parish of Farnham in Rappahannock County and Eliza(beth) his wife of the one part, and Josias Pickes of Plymouth in the County of Devon, Mariner, of the other part. In this deed, Overton sells

“a plantation of 250 acres including dwelling house & etc. lying and being in Farnham parish in Rappahannock County adjoining to the head of a creek called Tobyas Smyths NW upon the lands of Sr. Henry Chichly and Peter Goodson.³⁴ And further the said Roger Overton and Eliza. his wife have made ordained and appointed by these presents James Voss of Yeorke River, John Cooper Citizen and Grocer of London, John Dickes & John Lacey planter or any of them the true and sufficient lawful attorneys of them the said Roger Overton and Eliza. His wife.”

The indenture was witnessed by John Cooper, John Dick, and John Bargeman Sr. The same day, Overton executed a power of appointment to John Cooper which reads:

33 There are two wills among the records of the Prerogative court of Canterbury. One is for Thomas Shamant, mariner of Stepney, Middlesex. It is dated 7 Mar 1672 (PROB 11/338). The other is for his wife, Alice. Her will is dated 17 Sep 1677, and she is described as “Alice Shamant, Widow of Radcliffe, Middlesex.” The records of St. Paul, Shadwell, Middlesex, England show the burial of Thomas Shamant in Feb 1671 and that of Alice Shamant on 13 Sep 1677.

34 Tobias Smith’s Creek, also known as Adcock and Adcock’s Creek and, more recently, as Muddy Gut, is on the south side of the Rappahanock river, just over eight miles south of Tappahannock, Virginia.

“KNOW ALL MEN by these presents that I Roger Overton late of the parish of Farnnham in the County of Rappa. in VIRGA: Planter but now Resident in Shadwell in the parish of Stebone Heath Als Stepney in the County of Middx Have appoynted my loveing Friend John Cooper of Shadwell aforesd in the parish of Stepney aforesd and County of Middlx aforesd Cittizen and Grocer of London my true and lawfull Attorney and Deputy for me and in my name But to and for the sole and only proper use Behoofe & Benefitt to aske demand and receive of and from Henry Creighton and John Lacy in the Land of Virginia all goods wares chattles whosever as now is or hereafter shall be due owing payable or belonging unto me IN WITTNESS whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seale this XIth day of Septembr: Anno Dom 1667 Etc. Signed Roger Overton by mark. Witnesses Robt. Strangroome, John Dick.” ***Recorded in Com Rappa 12 Die Maii 1668. The Oathes of JOSIAS PICKES & JOHN DICKE taken before me John Cox saith that they saw this Letter of Attorney signed sealed and delivered unto JOHN COOPER bearing date the 19th of Septembr: 1667.”

Research discloses that the man mentioned above as John Dick(e) or Dickes, is actually the man who appears frequently in the records of Essex County as John Dike or Dyke. This John Dike is the father of the John Dike that married Mary Sharpe whose sister, Anne Sharpe, married thirdly Vincent Vause or Vass, previously mentioned. Mary and Anne Sharpe were the daughters of John Sharpe of old Rappahannock and his wife Judith. John Sharpe died in the late 1660s and his wife Judith remarried to Thomas Harwar, the probable brother of Samuel Harwar of Essex County, who married Anne Killman. Recall that the will of George Ludlow referred to a Samuel Harwar of London, who is very probably the father of the Thomas and Samuel Harwar of Essex, forming yet another possible link between the Vaulx and Vass families.

There are a number of other records in old Rappahannock that mention the land of Josias Pickes and Roger Overton. They include a patent of 18 Mar 1663/4 to Roger Overton of 100 acres adjoining a parcel formerly James Bagnall’s “now in possession of Overton and (John) Lacy” and a patent of 18 Sep 1665 to John Lacy, “adjoining his own land and Roger Overton.” There is also a deed of 3 Jan 1671 between John Dike and William Copeland for “200 acres of land the said land being part of a tract of land Pattented by John Kilman which the said Kilman now liveth upon, sold by Kilman to John Patterson and by Patterson unto Dike.”³⁵ The land description reads as follows: “beginning at a Spanish Oake in line of Capt. Josias Pickus.” This was signed by John Dike and Easter (sic, Hester) Dike his wife. This John Dike and wife Hester were the parents of John Dike who married Mary Sharpe.

35 The following comes from the records of Essex County dated 10 Oct 1696: Whereas there has been a partition (per order of Essex court of 20 Dec 1695 by Capt. Wm. Moseley surveyor) of land between Samuel Harwar and Ann his wife and John Cammill and Sarah his wife, which descended to Ann and Sarah from their deceased brother, George Killman, late of the above said county of Essex . . . Signed Samuel Harwar, Ann Harwar (by mark). Wit: James Boughan and Henry Woodnut.

Additionally, there is a deed of 26 Oct 1671 between John and George Kilman and Mr. Richard Bray for 200 acres on Piscataway Creek.³⁶ The land description mentions, among others, Mr. Jno. Dick, Capt Pikis, John Bibby's line, and Lacy's path.

Returning to Roger Overton, we find from the records that he left Essex County, Virginia and returned to England where he resided in (Upper) Shadwell in the Parish of Stebone Heath. The Parish of Stebone Heath is also called Saint Dunstan Stepney Parish, Middlesex, England. This area is today in central London, located on the Thames River. In the seventeenth century, Shadwell, Middlesex, became an area known for its maritime shipping and associated trade industries, and the area where many London merchants with shipping interests were located, so it is not surprising that Robert Vaulx had connections there, and probably lived in the same vicinity himself.

As noted earlier, there is another tie-in between James Voss or Vaulx of York River, and Robert Vaulx, merchant of London. This is evidenced by a chancery suit, the record of which can be found in the Public Records Office in London. The case is *Robert Vaulx, William Nevett and George Lee vs. Josias Pickes*.

In the bill of complaint of this case, dated 9 Nov 1669, it is alleged that Vaulx, Nevett, and Lee were owners of the ship called "*York Merchant*," and were involved with trade to Virginia. In September 1668, they made an agreement with Josias Pickes for him to go as master of the ship on a voyage to Virginia. They freighted the ship with goods worth upwards of £2,000 and with two hundred passengers. The voyage was made in six weeks and Pickes sold the unused victuals and provisions and made a great profit from the outward and return cargoes. The complaint alleges Pickes managed to obtain all the documents relating to the voyage, including the charter party, and all the money he received from trade on the voyage, "and he now refuses to come to an account with the plaintiffs." The case is over damages claimed by Vaulx and the others.

In this case, Josias Pickes answers the bill of complaint and says that plaintiffs have already brought an action against him in King's Bench court. In Dec 1668, they made an agreement for the voyage of the *York Merchant* of which they were owners, and the defendant master for a voyage to Virginia. He said he undertook a bond of £1,000 to keep his side of the Charter Party. The record gives

³⁶ As noted in *Virginia Gleanings in England*, Richard Bray "late of Rappahannock River, in Island of Virginia," left a nuncupative will that was administered 20 Nov 1691 by Elianor Daniell, his sister. The will, dated 9 Apr 1690 and proved in Lancaster County, Virginia the same month, leaves most of his property to his widow, Ann. "Then mayest go to England and live like a gentlewoman," "only I give the boy Ned a mare and a gun, and some small things to begin with, because I brought him out of his native countrey, and hee farther said he had no Relacon but the boy Ned and a sister that had two daughters, but he said he will give them nothing when he dyed, but they might shift as heed done before them." There is on record in Richmond County, Virginia a deed dated 5 Jun 1699, from Edward Bray, of that county, nephew and heir of Richard Bray, deceased, to John King, of Bristol, England, mariner. This Edward Bray was the "Boy Ned" mentioned in the will. The name Bray will come up in later discussion in relation to an Edward Voss or Voss of Virginia.

details of the account he submitted to the plaintiffs on his return to England, including all outgoings on the voyage and money received for the freight. He says he believes he carried out his duties as laid down in the Charter Party and was not guilty of any negligence.

About this same time, we find in the court of Chancery another suit: *George Lee and William Nevett vs. Isaac Barton, John Harris and Thomas Shamant*. Lee and Nevett were also plaintiffs in the suit against Josias Pickus. The case lasted several years, beginning in 1670. The complaint of 26 Oct 1670 alleged that Lee and Nevett had for several years traded to Virginia and Barbados. In May 1669, they made an agreement with Isaac Barton, John Harris, and Thomas Shamant, owners of the ship “*Elizabeth*,” to freight the ship for a voyage to Virginia. Shamant was to go as master and sail to York River where Hugh Levett, or John Bowler, or Robert Whiteaire would act as factors for Lee and Nevett. The complaint alleges there was delay in setting sail from Portsmouth which caused some damage to the outward cargo.

In testimony in the case taken 15 Nov 1670, defendants Barton, Harris, and Shamant claimed the ship was well equipped and in good condition for the voyage, and set sail within the required time. They said there were delays in Barbados because the freighter’s agents had not gotten the cargo ready for lading. They maintained the “*Elizabeth*” was the first ship to arrive in Virginia in that season, and the master and crew cooperated in every way to get her loaded quickly, but the factors had not gotten enough tobacco and the master therefore made a protest in the colony for the losses to the ship and asked the master and crew to help in procuring more goods. They maintained damage on the outward voyage was due to poor packing of the cargo.

Testimony given by Nevett on 30 Aug 1671 indicated that Nevett and Lee freighted the “*Elizabeth*,” with Thomas Shamant master, for a voyage to Barbados and Virginia. The ship arrived in the York River in Oct 1669, which was too early to get a good cargo of tobacco. Nevett said he was present when the cargo was unloaded and that some brandy and wine were missing, which he believed were consumed on the voyage.

John Seayers testified 20 Oct 1671 and noted that he was employed by George Lee as his agent in Virginia and guaranteed that a cargo of tobacco would be put on the ship. After it was loaded, he said the master delayed sailing for some fourteen days so he could go back with another vessel. He testified that he also believed the missing wine and brandy was consumed on the voyage.

There is more to the court record, but it clearly demonstrates that Robert Vaulx of London, merchant, was intimately acquainted with Josias Pickes, the same man who owned land in old Rappahannock County, and who had connections with a number of families there closely associated with the Vincent Vass family, and with “James Voss” of Yeorke River. This suggests the possibility that Vin-

cent Vass, whose name also appears in the early records of Middlesex and old Rappahannock Counties of Virginia both as Vaus and as Vause, is also some relation to Robert and James Vaulx.

There is one other circumstantial link between Vincent Vass and the Vaulx family and it involves the Haselwood family. It may be recalled that there was an earlier mention of a power of attorney given by Robert Vaulx in a proceeding witnessed by John Haselwood, and others. This is very likely a Capt. John Haselwood of London who later appears in the records of Middlesex County, Virginia. He had a brother Thomas Haselwood. Interestingly, the first mention of Vincent Vass in the Virginia records appears in a Middlesex County court record of 1682 when Thomas Haselwood obtained a judgment against Vincent "Vaus" as the name was spelled in the court record.

As an aside, there is a parish record which states that Josias Pikes of Plymouth, Devon, England married Elizabeth Sairs on 13 Dec 1653 at Saint Andrew Church, Plymouth, Devon, England. This is doubtless the same man that was master of the ship called the "*York Merchant*," which was owned by Robert Vaulx, and others. We have also seen that a John Seayers was involved in the case of *Lee and Nevett vs. Thomas Shamant et al.* Was this John Seayers perhaps a father to Elizabeth Sairs, or some other relative? It seems likely.

The land records of York County show that on 29 Oct 1672, Thomas Davis (son of John Davis Sr.) sold to James Vaulx 250 acres of improved land lying in Marston Parish, York County, between Capt. Carter and Edward Thomas.³⁷ In the deed, he mentions that 100 acres of the plantation "was purchased by my father, John Davis, of John Thomas." Horsfall, referencing the book *Giles Carter of Virginia, a genealogical memoir* by William Carter, says that in the York County records there is a certificate for James Vaulx for 3,350 acres of land for the importation of numerous persons whom he lists; however an examination of this reference shows no such record, so, perhaps, he meant to refer to another reference or was simply incorrect in this statement.

In 1674, Marston Parish was combined with Middletown to form the present Bruton Parish. Bruton Parish church still stands in Williamsburg, Virginia. Bishop Meade, an early Episcopalian minister of Virginia, says in his book, *Old Churches, Ministers, and Families of Virginia*, that James Vaulx was a vestryman of Bruton Parish church. Horsfall notes that this is interesting because his name is not placed on one of the pews in the modern church as are the names of four of his friends: Thomas Ballard, Philip Chesley, James Bray, and Samuel Timson. Also, the name of another of James's friends, Baldwin Matthews, a warden of the church, is also placed in the church there.

³⁷ Could the parish called "Marston" take its name from Marston Meysey? It seems probable given the prominence of the Vaulx family in early York County.

According to volume five of the series *Genealogies of Virginia Families*, the Timson residence in York, now called Travis Point, was known as “*Vaux Hall*,” and was patented by Robert Vaux, and sold by him to Rev. Peter Temple, who sold it to George Richards, merchant of London. Richards then conveyed it to Samuel Timson by a deed recorded 26 Feb 1693. The James Vaulx, whom Meade says served on the vestry of Bruton Parish church, is the husband of Elisheba whose last name remains unknown.

The book, *Adventurers of Purse and Person*, discusses the Matthews family, including Baldwin Matthews. It states that Baldwin Matthews was referred to by Governor Sir William Berkeley in April 1675 as not above four or five years old, and he was “under age” on 5 Jan 1681/82, when William Cole Esq., and Mrs. Elisheba Vaulx were trustees of Baldwin Matthews. One of Baldwin’s daughters married, as his first wife, Samuel Timson of Vaux or Vaus Hall, born 1686.

As noted, James and Elisheba Vaulx were members of Bruton Parish church in what is now Williamsburg, Virginia. In 1632, Middle Plantation (subsequently Williamsburg) was “laid out and paled in” seven miles inland from Jamestown in the original county of James City, and shortly thereafter a parish bearing the plantation name was created. In 1644, a parish in James City county, called “Harrop,” was established. On 1 Apr 1648, it was united with Middle Plantation Parish to form the Parish of Middletown. In 1674, the Parish of Marston (established in York County in 1654), and Middletown Parish were united under the name Bruton Parish. The source from which the name was derived is suggested by the inscription on the tomb of Sir Thomas Ludwell, which lies at the entrance of the north transept door. It states that he was born “at Bruton, in the county of Summerset (sic), in the Kingdom of England, and departed this life in the year 1678.” Incidentally, Bishop Meade copied his information from the old vestry book (now lost) that ended in 1769.

There are several references to the name Vaulx (and variants) in the Bruton records. For example, in the year 1674, there is mention of the death of a Thomas Vaulx, son of James, and on 4 Nov 1677, the register records the death of a Mr. James Vaulx. There are also several references to a “Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx” in the Bruton records, extending from 14 Feb 1662 until 5 Oct 1665, when the record notes that “Mrs. Elizabeth Vaulx departed,” as noted earlier. The Bruton records record the death of another Elizabeth Vaulx in 1666, and she may be a daughter of James and Elisheba. Her identity and that of an Edward Vaulx mentioned in a record of 30 Aug 1663 are not known. Finally, there is also a record of the death of an Ann Vaulx in the Bruton records, which give her date of death as 5 Dec 1723. All of the existing Bruton Parish references to Vaulx etc. are compiled in the table in Appendix A.

There is a York County record of 23 Mar 1677/78 which says that James Vaulx was appointed Justice of the Peace by the Governor. He did not live for very long after this because the Bruton Parish

records show that he died on 4 Nov 1677. A bond for the administration of his estate was recorded in York County on 24 Apr 1678, and an inventory of the estate of “Mr. James Vaulx” was taken and appraised and entered at court on 7 May 1678. A copy of the inventory and appraisal is included in Appendix B, and it is indeed substantial. Bruce, in his *Economic History of Virginia*, states that it was the largest estate brought before the York court in the interval between 1672 and 1690, being valued at £642 exclusive of debts due the estate. His wife, Elisheba, is mentioned as executrix.

Elisheba remained in the York County or Williamsburg area for a while following the death of her husband. On 24 Feb 1679/80, she entered Brian Smith as her attorney in York County. This could indicate that she had left York by this time and moved to Northampton County, Virginia. Whether she had left for Virginia’s Eastern Shore or not, there is evidence that the settlement of James’ estate continued. For example, on 25 Aug 1680, an inventory of the estate of James Vaulx was ordered and on 25 Oct, the York court ordered settlement of the estate. However, on 2 Dec 1681, there is another inventory of the estate of James Vaulx. Shortly thereafter, on 5 Jan 1681/82, a sale of the estate was ordered by the court. On the same date, an inventory, appraisal, and account of the estate were ordered to be recorded. A few weeks later, on 23 and 24 Feb 1681/2, another account was recorded in court. Elisheba is mentioned in a York County writ of Habeas Corpus:

“Complaint being made to mee by ffrancis Page Late Sheriff, that Mrs. Elisheba Vaulx standeth indebted to him ye sum of three thousand and odd hundred pounds of tobacco & forty shillings sterl. By account for fees and shee by a writt of Habeas Corpus from ye Rt Honble ye Governr being delivered to ye sheriff of James Citty & process according to Law not to bee had agt her in this county,

“These are therefore in his Matys name to will & require you to attach soe much of the Estate of ye above named Elisheba Vaulx as you shall find in the hands of Coll William Cole & ye same soe attached yt you detayne in yor hands or otherwise so provide itt may be forthcoming, hereof you are not faile as alsoe to make due returne of this precept. Given under my hand this 22nd day of May, 1682/ OTHO THORPE.”

Given the size, complexity and value of James Vaulx’s estate, it is not surprising that it took several years to settle. It would be interesting to know what Elisheba received from her husband’s estate.

Elisheba Vaulx

As has already been discussed, James Vaulx, son of Robert, merchant of London, had a wife named Elisheba. In some records, her name is written as Elishe and as Alicia. The Robert Vaulx family

had some connection with the well known Custis family of Virginia's Eastern Shore.³⁸ The earliest evidence of this can be found in a letter written by Elizabeth Vaulx, wife of Robert Vaulx, merchant of Virginia and London. The letter, dated 18 Oct 1655, reads as follows:

"Mr. John Custis, I have enclosed sent you my order and execution drawn against Mr. Isaac Foxcroft. Lt. Col. Kendall hath since your going been here with me to deliver a suspension of ye execution for a month or thereabouts saying that Mr. Foxcroft takes all the care possible to contrive me payment & presumes in that time he will do it and also says it is probable he shall be my paymaster. Now sir I shall wholly leave the business to yourself either (to) receive the whole debt or compound it as you shall think fit not doubting of your certain pain to act in it as for your self. And I do by the said presents empower you to receive or compound and upon receipt of the whole or so to discharge the said Foxcroft for what you shall receive. But provided there be but part paid presently to take security for the remainder only be pleased to take notice of this that in case the payment be in tobacco unless the whole sum be received it will not be worth while to land over a sloop and William Kendall says if he and Mr. Foxcroft agree upon what they have proposed between themselves he will pay the whole sum in tobacco down and I hope to come and see you ere long and give you thanks. In the interim I subscribe your real friend to serve you." Signed "Eliz: Vaulx." Witnessed by William Andrews, Robert Whitehowse. "Subscribed this Coll. John Custis of Ackamacke als Northampton. Recorded the 29th of August 1666."

There are other indications of connection between the Custis and Vaulx families. For example, on 31 Jul 1682, Mr. Tankred, on behalf of "Mr. John Custis Jun'r" went into court and claimed Alicia Vaulx owed him the sum of "450 pounds of tobacco and cask." This may have been in connection with final settlement of her husband's estate. On 28 Feb 1704, Major John Custis (this would be John III who is discussed *infra*) commenced a suit against a John Vaux. On 8 Feb 1715/16, Thomas Custis obtained an attachment from Mr. Henry Custis (a Justice) of 233 pounds of tobacco against the estate of James Vaulx recently of this (Northampton) County. It is believed that this James Vaulx was another son of Elisheba and James Vaulx who removed from Northampton County, Virginia to Dorchester County, Maryland, where he died. This James Vaulx was deposed in Dorchester in 1741/1742, at which time he said he was about 75 years old, hence born ca.1666 or 1667. He is discussed in more detail below.

As to the Custis family connection, the story begins in 1649, when prominent Eastern Shore planter, Argoll Yeardley, son of former Virginia Governor, Sir George Yeardley, married Ann Custis in Holland and brought her and her brother, John Custis II, back to Virginia. John Custis II was born in

38 The short sketch of the Custis family given here is from the report by Nicholas M. Lucchetti called "Archaeology at Arlington: Excavations at the Ancestral Custis Plantation, Northampton County, Virginia." Also see James B. Lynch, *The Custis Chronicles: The Virginia Generations*, Picton Press, Camden, Maine and Ralph Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore: A History of Northampton and Accomack Counties*, Virginia Historical Society, Richmond, Virginia.

Holland. Because he was not born in England, or Virginia, he was considered an “alien,” and could not own land until he was naturalized in 1659. So he likely resided with his sister, Ann, and her husband, Argoll Yeardley, at their home on Old Town Neck on Mattawoman Creek, Northampton County.

John II married in 1652 to Elizabeth Eyer, and then leased a parcel of land from Argoll Yeardley, in 1653. A year later, their only surviving son, John III was born. It seems Elizabeth (Eyer) Custis did not live long after his birth and the 28-year old John II “took a major step toward expanding his wealth by marrying 40-year old, thrice-widowed Alicia Traveler Burdett Walker in 1656.” This alliance soon brought John II wealth and power, as well as political and military office. She was first married to George Traveler, then William Burdette, thirdly to Maj. Peter Walker, and then to Custis.

In some records, her given name is written as Alice, but it appears in other records as Alicia and as Elisheba. She was born about 1616, which would make her a contemporary of the children of James Vaulx “medicus.” According to Milnor Ljungstedt’s *The County court Note-Book* “A quaint record of a suit for slander shows that she had at one time lived on the ‘Western Shore’” before relocating to Virginia’s Eastern Shore.” George Traveler’s will is dated 20 Feb 1642.

By her marriage to George Traveler, Alicia had a son George, and daughter Elizabeth, who married William Andrews, by whom there was a daughter, Elisheba Andrews, who married Peter Reverdy. It is interesting to note that this Alice/Alicia/Elisheba, who married first George Traveler, was accused in 1641 of having a sexual liaison with Capt. Francis Yardley. Her accuser was a man named George Vaux. What this suit was about is not known, nor is there any information about its outcome. But it does seem likely this George is yet another member of the Vaulx family of Virginia.

Some time after 1676, Alicia Custis died and John II married, in 1681, to his third wife. Tabitha Scarburgh Smart Brown, daughter of Col. Edmund Scarburgh, an Eastern Shore planter, “whose power and wealth made him the equal, if not superior to Custis.” Scarburgh was born 2 Oct 1617 in London, Middlesex, England. Interestingly, the Virginia land records (*Cavaliers & Pioneers*, vol. i, p. 119) contain an entry dated 3 Aug 1640 for a patent to Edmund Scarburgh of Accomack County for 600 acres, 100 acres for transporting himself and wife, Mary, and ten other persons, one of whom was Alice Vaulx. Was this the wife of James Vaulx, son of Robert of London, or perhaps another family member? Information at this time is insufficient to identify her.

As noted, John Custis II had a son John III, who later lived at a plantation called “Wilsonia” on the Eastern Shore. When he died in 1713, the following provision was made in his will: “I give to my sister in law Elishe Frank two cows and cafs and as much stuff as will (make) her Gown and Petticoat as much new good Linen as will make her three shifts.” The will was witnessed by Elishe Frank and others, and Elishe was also was one of the witnesses when the will was proved in court. Elishe Frank was

educated and literate, because she wrote her name, and did not sign by mark. As noted, John II refers to Elishe as his "sister in law," but the exact nature of their relation is not clear since that term could also mean "step-sister," and other things. Elishe Frank was in fact the same person as Elisheba Vault, the widow of James Vault, who died in York County, Virginia in 1677. So, it seems that, following the death of her husband, Elisheba moved to Northampton County, Virginia where she married John Frank or Franke.³⁹ It is likely she moved to Northampton because she had long-standing family connections there, including one to the Custis family as noted here.

Elisheba Vault, also called Elishe and Alicia, is discussed in the 2003 book *Brabbling Women: Disorderly Speech and the Law in Early Virginia*, by Terri L. Snyder, and in the 1999 book *Over the Threshold: Intimate Violence in Early America*, by Christine Daniels and Michael V. Kennedy. She was married to Frank some time before 13 Dec 1702, because, on that date, Frances Waterson of Northampton County included this bequest in her will: "I give to Elisheba Frank my riding horse." This Frances was actually Frances Wilkins, the wife of John Waterson. Frances was the daughter of Ann by her first husband John Wilkins. Ann married secondly Rev. Thomas Higby of Northampton County, and thirdly, a man named Henry Voss. Both Ann and Henry Voss appear in the old records with their names in several variants. One is this provision in a will there: "To said Frances Waterson two chests at the house of John Daniel, and to obtain a rug in the custody of Mrs. Anne Vosse widow, and hold it for the use of (Capt.) Isaac Foxcroft of Hull, mariner."

John Franke died in Northampton some time before 17 Nov 1713, and Elishe (Vault) Frank died there some time before 17 Feb 1718/19, according to court records involving the settlement of their estates.⁴⁰

Issue of James and Elisheba

From various records, it is believed that James and Elisheba Vault had three sons: Robert, James, and John. The Thomas Vault, who died in 1674, according to the Bruton Parish records, and called "son of James Vault," is probably another son. There may also have been daughters. Robert, James

³⁹ There are numerous references to a John Frank or Franke in the Dorchester records. Among these is the will of William Hill of the Transquaken River in Dorchester, dated 10 Feb 1691 and proved 21 Aug 1694, which was witnessed by John Franke and James Vault. On 21 Aug 1691, John Franke witnessed the will of Jeremiah Davis. On 25 Jan 1692/3, he witnessed the will of Thomas Cook. On 1 Feb 1693/4, he was mentioned in the inventory of Jeremiah Davis. On 6 Feb 1693, he was listed among a list of debts to the estate of John Sutton. On 6 Mar 1694/5, he was made a power of attorney by John Edmondson and his wife Sarah. On 17 Sep 1694, he was called a "well beloved friend" by Henry Mitchell. On 22 Sep 1694, he was an appraiser of the estate of William Norcom. On 16 May 1695, he was paid out of the estate of Edward Newton. On 10 Jul 1701, he was paid out of the estate of Thomas Cooke.

⁴⁰ See James Handley Marshall, *Abstracts of the Wills and Administrations of Northampton County, Virginia, 1632-1802*.

and John appear in the records of Northampton County, Virginia, and also in Talbot and Dorchester County, Maryland, which are on the Eastern Shore of Maryland.

Robert Vaulx

It has already been seen that James and Elisheba Vaulx had a son Robert, who was in Dorchester County, Maryland by 10 Jun 1693. Because he was called “apparent heir” to James, he was probably James and Elisheba’s oldest surviving son and born before 1666/67. There is also a conveyance of land in York County in 1698 by Robert Vaulx, and Elizabeth his wife of Dorchester, so Robert too had a wife named Elizabeth. She may be one of the Elizabeths mentioned in the Bruton Parish register.

The name Robert Voss also appears in the records of Talbot County, which is adjacent to Dorchester County, where he is listed as an appraiser of the inventory of the estate of Mortough Horney on 29 Aug 1698. He is also mentioned in a deed, of 3 May 1699, from Thomas Baxter of Stafford County, Virginia, to Edward Willowby of Dorchester, for “Cedar Point on the north side of Island Bay, containing 150 acres more or less,” witnessed by Robert Vaulx and John Lecompte.

He is also probably the “Robert Vows” who appears in the register of St. Michael’s Parish in Talbot. The register notes that Robert Vows, of St. Michael’s River, had the following issue: Anthony, b. 11 Jul 1689; Sarah, b. 18 Oct 1691; Thomas, b. 18 Oct 1691; Elizabeth, b. 29 Jan 1694/5; and Francis, b. 9 Nov 1700, and baptized 24 Jun 1702.

There is some evidence suggesting Robert died in 1705, when an inventory of the estate of a Robert Voss was taken 20 Sep 1705. The appraisers of his estate were Phillemon Armstrong and Dennis Hopkins, Jr.

A Sarah Voss is listed in an accounting of the Talbot estate of Joseph Rogers under the date 1 Sep 1716, and could be Robert’s daughter. She is also mentioned in the 13 Sep 1716 account of the estate of Col. Thomas Smithson who left a will, dated 1 Nov 1713 and proved 9 Apr 1714. It left to his wife, Mary, a number of tracts of land (named in the will). They included part of “Mill Road,” and part of “Mill Road Addition,” including “Vaux’s Land,” with the provision that the said lands should pass at her decease to the vestry of St. Michael’s Parish to be used as glebe property. Smithson also left land in Dorchester to a kinswoman, Mary, called “wife of John Wrightson,” and a sister, Dorothy, wife of Michael Fletcher of Richmond, Yorkshire, England. The property referred to as “Vaux’s Land” could have been some of Robert’s land in Talbot.

The prerogative court records of Talbot also mention the estate of a James Voss of Talbot. There is no date, but it would appear to be some time in 1764. Appraisers were Francis and Solomon Neall, and

creditors were James Tilghman and John Martin. Sarah Voss and Martha Voss were named as next of kin to James. Joseph Colman was the administrator. These individuals too are probably related to Robert Vault of Talbot County.

As to Robert's son, Francis, it seems he later moved to Dorchester County, where he appears in the records as both Francis Voss and Francis Vass. He married Mary Eccleston, daughter of Hugh Eccleston of Dorchester, who patented a 940 ac. tract called "Retaliation" on 5 Sep 1709. On his death, Hugh Eccleston left half of this tract to his daughter Mary, and half to his daughter Rachel, who married Walter Stevens. Francis Vass died some time between 12 Nov 1736 and 1 Jul 1745, when a valuation of his land was carried out. This document refers to "Robert Vass, son and orphan of Francis Vass, deceased," and "now under the guardianship of Mr. John Eccleston." The land mentioned is the 470 acres of "Retaliation" left to his mother. The description mentions Isaac Anderson living on the north-west side of the plantation and Thomas Clark, who "tends land on the south and west side." The valuation was done by Abraham Clark and Stephen Fleharty.

Robert, son of Francis and Mary, married a woman known as Ann or "Nancy" Thomas. They were married some time prior to 28 Nov 1760, on which date Robert and Nancy conveyed their share of "Retaliation" to William Murray. Their daughter was Mary "Polly" Voss, who was born 24 Aug 1763, according to an old Bible record from Ross County, Ohio. She married Gladston or Gladstone Colston on 1 Nov 1791. The Bible records also note that Mary's parents were Robert and Nancy Voss. Gladston Colston must have died some time before 15 Nov 1804, because, on that date, his widow, Mary "Polly," remarried in Dorchester County, Maryland, to Edmond Brannock. There is also some suggestion this lady married a third time to a George Ater, and died in Ross Count, Ohio in 1857, where she is buried in Clarksburg behind the Methodist Church there. Supposedly, on the stone it says Mary Ater wife of George Ater. Her will is in Ross County.

Robert Voss or Vass was still living on 3 Dec 1763, when he witnessed a deed in Dorchester, but when or where he died is not known. His wife Nancy may be the person of that name who, along with Dolley Ewing, were listed as next of kin during the administration of the estate of Mary Thomas of Dorchester. Mary Thomas is probably some kin to Ann Thomas, who married Robert Voss.

Robert Vault also had a son, Thomas, born 18 Oct 1691, who may be the Thomas Voss who was a witness to the will of Anthony Wise, gentleman, of Talbot County. This will was dated 15 May 1718.

Robert's other son, Anthony, who was born in Talbot County 11 Jul 1689, is probably the man who left a will proved in Talbot on 10 May 1720. It mentions Cousins William and James Bell, and named a Rebecca Webb as executrix and residuary legatee. Witnesses were Thomas Pratt and John Baggs. On 1 Mar 1700, a Rebecca Parrott married Richard Webb, and she may be the Rebecca Webb

mentioned in Anthony's will. Her husband, Richard Webb, was deceased by June 1719, and a Rebecca Webb, widow, married Caleb Clark in Talbot on 5 Feb 1721.

It seems that Robert Vaulx was not the only person of that surname or similar variants in the early Talbot County records. The Maryland records show that a David Vaukes or Vaux of Talbot was transported in 1668, and his four years of service ended in February 1670. His identity has not been determined. There is also a record of the Talbot marriage of a John "Vake" to Mary Arrington on 3 Oct 1717. The name "Vake" could be a transcription error and the name could be Vauke. or something similar. Examination of the original entry might clarify this.

John Vaulx

John Vaulx, as noted earlier, is another probable son of James of York County, Virginia and Elisheba, his wife. A John Vaulx of Dorchester was mentioned as a witness, along with Jacob Loockerman and Thomas Taylor Jr., to the will of Henry Willmott of Dorchester, dated 26 Feb 1696/97 and proved 4 Jun 1707. Assuming this John Vaulx was of age when he witnessed this will (i.e., at least 21 years old), he was probably born about 1675, or before. On 28 Feb 1704, Major John Custis of Northampton County, Virginia commenced a suit against a John Vaux, possibly the same man.

He is probably the John Voss whose Dorchester estate was appraised on 3 Aug 1709 by Joseph Thomas and Humphrey Hubbord. The inventory of his estate was recorded in court in Dorchester on 14 Dec 1709. Whether he married or had issue is not known.

James Vaulx

The third son of James and Elisheba was also named James. It seems he was born about 1666, an age based on a Dorchester County court land cause proceeding in which he was deposed between 10 Nov 1741 and 16 Feb 1742. In his testimony, he stated that he was about seventy-five years old, thereby placing his date of birth as ca. 1666/67. He and John Franke witnessed the will of William Hill of the Transquaken River in Dorchester which, was written 10 Feb 1691, and proved 21 Aug 1694.

He may also be the James Vaulx who, along with John Williams, witnessed a Dorchester deed of gift of slaves from Mark Marrott to his daughter Elizabeth LeCompt. The name LeCompt brings to mind the 3 May 1699 deed from Thomas Baxter of Stafford County, Virginia, which was witnessed by a Robert Vaulx and John LeCompte. It is possible James resided for a time in Northampton County where his mother lived. This is suggested by the fact that on 8 Feb 1715/16, Thomas Custis obtained

an attachment from Mr. Henry Custis (a Justice) of 233 pounds of tobacco against the estate of James Vault “recently of this (Northampton) County.”

James’s Dorchester will is dated 24 Jan 1745, and it was proved 17 Feb 1745. It mentions his wife, Sarah, sons Ebenezer and John, daughters Margaret and Easter (probably Hester), and grandson Josiah. He also had a son named James, but he is not mentioned in the will of his father. He left a tract of land called “Vault’s Adventure” to his son Ebenezer, and he gave his son, John, the remainder of “Vault’s Adventure,” and another tract called “Vault’s Addition.” Witnesses were Peter Taylor, Peter Taylor Jr., William Smith, Jr., and Lemuel Goodwin. A Sarah Vault, probably James’ wife, was deposed in a Dorchester County land cause proceeding between 12 Nov 1745 and 11 Nov 1747, at which time she stated that she was about 50 years old, suggesting she was born ca. 1695-1697. If she was his wife, she was about 30 years younger than her husband, so it is possible that James (son of James and Elisheba) may have had one or more previous wives.

An Ebenezer Vault was also deposed in Dorchester County between 9 Nov 1762 and 9 Mar 1763, at which time he stated that he was about 48 years old, indicating a date of birth of ca. 1714.

James’s son, also named James, drew his will on 18 Jan 1745, and it was proved the same day as his father's will, suggesting they both probably died of the same illness. His will mentioned his wife, Catherine, sons Josiah and James, and daughter Peggy. A prerogative court proceeding on his estate mentions wife Catherine and lists next of kin as Ebenzer Vault and John Vault, his probable brothers. If his father believed his son was also dying, this could explain why he did not mention his son, James, in his will. The will of the younger James Vault mentions a son named James, and leaves a tract of land called “Bolton’s Venture,” to his daughter Peggy, noting that if she should die without issue, the land should go to his son, Josiah Vault. Witnesses were William Smith, Sherman Johnson, and Edward Rumbley.

The John Vault mentioned in the will of the senior James died about 1775. His Dorchester will, dated 23 Aug 1771 and proved 27 Feb 1775, leaves to his son John Vault a dwelling plantation of 93 acres, part of two tracts: “Vaultes Venter” (sic: Adventure) and “Vaultes Addition.” John left to his son James a bed “that was his grandmother’s.” This could be a bed that belonged to Elisheba Vault. John left his wife, Sarah, a residue of the estate during her widowhood, then equally to all his children. The will was witnessed by Solomon Causey, Cornelius Johnson, and Daniel Chance.

Ebenezer Vault was still living on 28 Feb 1767, when he executed a nine-year lease to James Breeding of Dorchester for a tract called "Smith's Chance." This transaction was witnessed by Isiah Vault. A prerogative court proceeding on the estate of James Vault (son of James and Elisheba) mentions next of kin as John Vault (probably his son), and Benjamin Vault.

The following marriages appear in Dorchester records and are probably related to the James Vaulx line: Robert Voss and Catharine Gootee, 14 Jun 1814; John Eccleston Voss and Melody Wrotten, 24 Dec 1798; William Cannerly Voss and Elizabeth Keene, 21 Aug 1784; Edward Pritchett and Henrietta Voss, 10 Aug 1799; John Hughes and Elizabeth Voss, 21 Jul 1798; and John Hughs and Sally Voss, 29 Nov 1797.

Thomas Vaulx, chirurgeon

Thomas Vaulx, brother to Robert, merchant of Virginia and London, is mentioned in the York County records in March 1647/48. The entry, which is written in Latin, records that Thomas Vause of London, chirurgeon, “is bound to Gerrard Hawthorne of Charleton Regis in Gloucester Co. £100 legal English money.” The agreement was signed by Thomas Vause and witnessed by Humphrey Vause and Robert Thorndell. The indenture agreement states that Gerrard Hawthorne “shall be bound as a covenant servant to Thomas Vause from hence forth until there first and next Arrivall in Virginia and then for the terme of three yeares” upon following condition, i.e., Vause to pay for Hawthorne’s apparrell and all other necessaries and shall provide him sufficient working tooles of all sorts for the severall trades of a Carpenter Joyner and Cooper and shall not at his arrival into the Country or afterwards at any time assigne or turne over the said Gerrard (without his owne consent) to any other person or persons to be there servant.” The agreement also provided that at the end of the 3 year term, Hawthorne was to have his equipment, tools, etc., and fifty acres of land.

This Gerrard Hawthorne is very likely the same Jared Hawthorn who was christened in the Parish of Charlton Kings, Gloucester, England on 14 Jul 1616, as the son of Robert Hawthorn. A Robert Hawthorn was christened in Charlton Kings 12 Apr 1576, son of John Hawthorn, and is likely Jared’s father. It should be noted that the Latin term for “king” is “rex” (plural “regis”), so it seems certain that Charleton Regis and Charleton Kings refer to the same parish.

Gerrard or Jared Hawthorne appears frequently in later Virginia records in connection with the Vaulx family. He seems to have died about 1670, because his will was proved in York County in that year. The will, dated 3 Jan 1670/71, mentions wife, Mary, son Robert, daughter Anne, and son Jerome. In his will, Hawthorne expresses his desire that Mr. Daniell Wyld, Mr. James Vaulx, and Mr. James Bray consider “what I have given my wife, and if they conceive it too little to pay her more.” The will also designates Mr. Humphrey Vaulx as a tutor to son Jerome, “in case my wife shall depart this life or marry a coarse man.” The will was witnessed by Elizabeth Hues, Edward Shomandine, and Edward

Bray, and recorded 22 Feb 1670/71.⁴¹ Mrs. Hawthorne is mentioned in the York County records on 11 Sep 1671, when Francis Matthews was ordered to pay her 400 pounds of tobacco “for her trouble and pains about a sick miller belonging to Matthews,” which sum he promised her at a vestry meeting of Marston Parish.

So, Thomas Vause or Vaulx was in London in March 1647/48 when he signed the indenture. He probably did this in preparation for sailing to Virginia since, as Horsfall notes, on 25 Jul 1648 the York County records say he “hath made sufficient proof that he hath due him 500 acres of land for the transportation of tenn (sic) persons,” including Thomas Vause, Humphrey Vaus, Jarratt Hawthorne, William Crompe (also, Crump) and six others.

We have seen that on 3 Jan 1647/48, Robert Vaus of Virginia, merchant gave a power of attorney to his brother Thomas Vause and to Lewis Burwell to collect debts and settle accounts in Virginia. In fact, the Virginia land patent books show that, on 18 Apr 1648, Mr. Lewis Burwell and Thomas Vause received a patent for 2,300 acres “Ye lower part whereof on York River, about 7 miles up the Narrow on the South side thereof.” The county was not specified; however, other records indicate this land was located about seven miles up the Pamunkey River from the present-day town of West Point, Virginia, so it would probably be in King William County today. The Pamunkey and Mattaponi Rivers converge at West Point to form the York River. The land records show that Thomas patented this same tract of land in New Kent County on 20 Jan 1650, when it was again described as “the lower part being in Yorke about 7 miles up the narrows on the south side . . . along tankes Queens Creek.” Some time later, on 6 Jun 1657, by order of court, this land was granted to Robert Vaulx, who was referred to in the order as “heir to said Thomas.” Robert and his wife Elizabeth subsequently sold this land to Francis Burnell, Gentleman, the deed being recorded on 1 Apr 1661. Malcolm Hart Harris, in his book called *Old New Kent County: some account of the planters, plantations, and places in New Kent County* says that Francis Burnell had been granted land at Warreneye between 1655 and 1659, which was a body of land behind the tract assigned on the river to Thomas Vause. Harris says that the 2,300 acre tract “lay between the Pamunkey River and Tanks Queen Creek, now called Cook’s Mill Creek, extending along the ridge from Cousic, toward the Courthouse.” Francis Burnell was a Justice of the County of New Kent in 1699, and it is likely he died before 1704 since his name does not appear in the Quit Rent lists for that year. However, Mrs. Mary Burnell was charged with a tract of 2150 acres of land, which is likely part of the original patent to Vause.

⁴¹ This is probably the Edward or “Ned” Bray discussed in an earlier footnote.

As noted earlier, the Vaulx and Burwell families were closely connected, as this and other records clearly demonstrate. For example, there is a 21 Jul 1648 York County record in which Dorothy (Dorothy) Wingatt, widow and relict of Roger Wingate, “some tyme treasurer of Virginia Decd.,” grants to “my only and well beloved sonn Lewis Burwell all quit rents due at the tyme of the decease of my said Husband Roger Wingate and confirmed unto me by his most excellent majesties gracious gift granted unto me under his Royal hand and signet at the court of Nottingham the last day of August in the Eighteenth yeare of his Raigne”. The record was signed by Dorothy Wingate, and the witnesses were Thomas and Humphrey Vause.

The 2,300 acre tract patented by Lewis Burwell and Thomas Vause came about as a result of an abortive attempt by one Edward Kingswell and his partner, Roger Wingate, to establish a colony in (North) Carolina. It turns out that, in Oct 1633, Kingswell, Wingate and their families and 40 other persons arrived in Jamestown on their way to Carolina. This venture failed, and Kingswell and Wingate returned to England, where they brought suit against Samuel Vassall and Peter Andrews, who had contracted to carry his party to Carolina, but failed to do so.

Roger Wingate, Kingswell’s partner, brother-in-law and residuary legatee, returned to Virginia, and was appointed treasurer of the colony in 1639, an office he held until his death in 1641. He married Dorothy, daughter of William Bedell of Catworth, County Huntingdon, England, and widow of Edward Burwell, of Harlington, County Bedford, England, as previously mentioned. His wife was the mother of Lewis Burwell, the emigrant member of the Virginia Family.

Another York County record, dated 22 Sep 1648, shows that Thomas Vause and Lewis Burwell were the administrators of the estate of James Stone, deceased, on behalf of Robert Vause, who confessed to have received of Thomas Broughton, according to an order of court, an account of the estate of the deceased James Stone. This was signed by Thomas Vause and Lewis Burwell, and witnessed by Thomas Steed.

Several records relating to the settlement of Stone’s estate can be found in the Public Records Office of London. For example, there is a 1648 chancery proceeding, Trinity Term of court, in the case *Harward vs. Vause*.⁴² The record notes: “Robert Vause pretended that he had Letters of Administration granted to him in Virginia of James Stone, merchant, whose tobacco in Virginia was entrusted at fifty

⁴² The names Harward is a variant of Harwood and Horwood. Arthur Horwood “of the Island of Virginia in the partes beyond the seas and now resident in the parish of St. Peter the advuncle neere the Tower of London, Marchant” left a will dated 3 Nov 1642 and proved 12 Dec 1642. In it, he left a cow in Virginia to “Mrs Dorothie Harwood.” From this, it is evident that Dorothie Harwood lived in Virginia and it appears from Hotten’s *Emigrants* that Augustine Harwood, aged 25, left London for Virginia in the ship “*Paul*” in July, 1635.

thousand weight. The brother-in-law of Robert Vause, Lewis Burrell⁴³ was his agent in Virginia. Robert Vause came over from Virginia after the death of James Stone that is about a year since. James Stone, described as late of Hackney, merchant, deceased, had a large estate in Virginia: he died upon a plantation upon Queenes Creeke in York River, Virginia, in January last past.” In the case, it is stated that John Rose, a deponent of St. Martins in the Field, chirurgeon, aged thirty, came into England about May last from Virginia. Also, in a 13 May 1648 chancery proceeding, there is the complaint of *Robert Vaulx (Vause) vs. Alexander Harwood et al. administrator of the estate of James Stone*, a Virginia merchant, who died in Jan 1647/48 in Virginia. It was ordered by the court in Virginia that Robert Vause and Lewis Burwell should administer the will. In the case of *Harwood c. Vause et al.*, we find that witnesses for the defendant included Robert Turrell (Terrell) and Thomas Broughton. In the case, it was stated on 28 Jan 1649/50, that defendant Vause testified he lived in Virginia, and “has neither house nor family in England.” In testimony of 2 May 1650, it was stated that James Stone was indebted to Harwood for £343, and had a sizable estate in Virginia. In January 1647, Stone died in the colony and Vause took over his estate for his own use. Vause offered to pay Harwood the debt less £30, maintaining that he seized the estate to pay debts owed him by Stone. Testimony of 14 Jun 1650 states that Robert Vause was “abroad in Virginia.”

Thomas Vause also patented land in Northumberland (later Westmoreland) County, Virginia, for on 18 Oct 1650, we find a patent from Sr. Wm. Berkeley to Thomas Vause gentleman for 500 acres on the south side of the Potomac River “at the mouth of a small creek that issueth out of Nominy river on the east side which divides this land from that of John Tasker.” Interestingly, Lewis Burwell patented a tract of 500 acres on the same day, and in the same vicinity, as it was described as on the south side of the Potomac River and upon the west side of Nominy river, beginning at a small branch of a creek which “divideth this land from the land of James Hare.” The Thomas Vause land was also adjacent to a tract patented by Thomas Youl (Youll, Yowell, etc.) as demonstrated by a 19 Oct 1653 patent to Youl for 150 acres in Northumberland County “Upon S. side of Nomeny riv., bounded on Westernmost side with a creek which divides this & land of Mr. Thomas Vause, dec’d & N.E. upon land of John Tasker.” This 150 acres was due for the transportation of 3 persons named in the patent. Vaulx and his wife, whose name was Elizabeth, sold this land to Mr. Thomas Yowell, granted 18 Oct 1653.

From the records, it seems that Thomas Vause died some time between Oct 1650 and Oct 1653. There is no indication of a will, so it appears he died intestate and without male issue as his estate in Virginia devolved to his older brother Robert. This is proved by a York County record of 6 Jul 1654 in

⁴³ The name Burwell is still pronounced in Virginia as Burrell by many natives.

which Robert Vault writes: "Mr. Youll I understand that you are possessed of a seate of land by Assignment from Richard Hawkins which my sister gave Mr. Broadhurst Order to make sale of which is of no validity without me I being the lawful heire thereto. Now these are to Certify that I have given power to the Bearer Tho Broughton to make sale thereof and in respect you are seated thereon to have the refusal for present Tobacco not else but rest Your loveing friend Robert Vault From my house in Queens Creek July 7 1654, 20 Jul 1655 this L're was Recorded." It should be noted that the reference by Robert Vault to his "sister" is actually a reference to his "sister-in-law," i.e., to the widow of his brother Thomas. In fact, as we have seen, Thomas Vause had a wife named Elizabeth because on 2 Jul 1669, Thomas Yowell patented 780 acres in Westmoreland, 500 acres granted to Mr. Thomas Vault 18 Oct 1650 "who with Elizabeth his wife sold to Yowell." What subsequently became of Elizabeth the widow of Thomas Vause is unknown.

On 20 Jul 1655, the York records show that Thomas Broughton, attorney of Robert Vault, assigned the above land to Tho Youll: "This same land being due unto the said Robert Vault as heire at com'on law to the said Tho Vault." This assignment was signed by Thomas Broughton and witnessed by Thomas Wilsford.⁴⁴ It was acknowledged and recorded the same day.

44 This Thomas Wilsford descends from the family of Wilsford of Hartridge in the Parish of Cranbrook, Kent, England. The pedigree is traced in Hasted's *Kent* (vii, 98-99), and in Berry's *Genealogies; Kent* (pp. 134-135). The arms are Gules a chevron engrailed between three leopards' heads or. Crest: a leopard's head, per pale, or and gules. Captain Thomas came to Virginia. In March 1651-1652, he represented Northumberland country in the Virginia House of Burgesses. On Nov. 25, 1652, he became the second Clerk of the Northumberland County court. On April 5, 1653 James Magregory and Hugh Fouch used Thomas Wilsford and "Bridget his wife " as headrights. In 1676 Thomas Wilsford became an active participant in Bacon's Rebellion. By birth he was the second son of a Knight who lost his life and estate in the Kings quarill; against the surname long Parliament, which forst him to Virginia (the only city of refuge left in his Majesties dominions, in those times for distressed Cavilers) to seeke his fortunes which through his industry began to be considerable, if the kindness of his fate had bin more permanent, and not destined his life to so reached a death." (Peter Force, *Tracts and other papers*, Washington D.C., 1836 no. xi, pp. 33-34) Captain Wilsford was captured and carried before Governor Sir William Berkeley. In the recent fighting he had lost an eye but he made jest of it in declaring that as the governor had long ago promised him a hanging as being one of those who went out with Bacon on his first expedition against the Indians, it made no difference whether he had one or two for that in either case the governor would see him well guided to the place of execution. (Tyler's *Encyclopedia*, vol. i, p. 250). About Oct. 1676, Wilsford was one of those who suffered the extreme penalty on the gallows. On Nov. 13th 1676, Governor Berkeley wrote a testimonial to the loyalty and services of Major Robert Beverley who, with a party of about forty on his second expedition after rebels following Bacon's death, "took several of their garrisons and chief commanders" including Thomas Wilford," on whom the rebels had great dependence, trusting in his skill to retreat". On 20 Feb 1676/77, in an Act of the General Assembly of Virginia, Wilsford was described as "one of the notorious actors and confederates with the said Nathaniel Bacon, junr. in the said rebellions and treasons" and was executed after being "tryed found guilty, and deservedly adjudged to death by the right honorable the governor and Councill of war of the chief commanders of the county" (Henning vol. ii, p. 370). On the preceding date. the real and personal estate of Captain Thomas Wilsford was declared forfeited to the King and an order was issued that it should be inventoried and held after the posting of security by the persons in whose hands it then was until the King should decide upon its final disposition.(Henning vol. ii, p. 377). This inventory is said to have been made in Oct. 1677.

Humphrey Vaulx

Humphrey Vaulx, a brother to Robert and Thomas Vaulx, was also in London on 3 Jan 1647/48, when he witnessed a document of Robert Vause of Virginia, merchant. A short time later, on 24 Mar 1647/48, he witnessed in London a document for his brother Thomas, as noted previously.

It appears he immigrated to Virginia in the spring of 1648, since he is listed on 25 July of that year as a headright, along with his brother Thomas. He may have returned to England again because Humphrey Vaulx and Susan Vaulx were listed on 1 Nov 1654 as headrights to Francis Hammond.⁴⁵ The identity of Susan Vaulx is unknown, although we have seen that James Vaulx “medicus” had a daughter named Susannah. So clearly the name runs in the family.

Humphrey began to acquire land in Virginia in 1657 because, on 26 Jan 1656/57 he and William Crump patented 1,000 acres of land in James City County, along Rickahock Path and behind land “sometimes of Thomas Gibson, deceased, beginning in Kiseohonsicke Swamp, running southeast by the head of Weekenoskeekiske Swamp.” This land was due for the transportation of 20 persons. The place called Ricahock, alias Fort Royal, was mentioned in 1655 as being on the York River somewhere in old New Kent County, suggesting that the land granted to Vaulx and Crump was in old New Kent.⁴⁶

We have seen that the name William Crump appears numerous times in the records of York County in connection with members of the Vaulx family. One of these records is a deposition given by Crump on 24 Jun 1654. In his statement, Crump says that “about Oct. last, upon arrival of the ‘*Elizabeth*,’ deponent fetched a boat from Mr. Harris’s landing by Mr. Vaulx’s order, which boat he understood to be Mr. Wheeler’s, but found it about 1/3 full of water and were forced to rid it and carried it from there to Mr. Vaulx’s landing, about ½ mile, and going up to the house we stayed half an hour, and coming again to the boat, we were forced to free it again, and from there we went aboard the ‘*Elizabeth*,’ where we could not make use of this by reason of her leaks, but were forced to free her coming; and when we came to Mr. Vaulx’s landing there was water in her, and the servants’ bedding we brought were wet, which everybody agreed.” In this statement, Crump also gives his age as 27 years suggesting he was born about 1627. Interestingly, the parish records of Charlton Kings, Gloucester-

⁴⁵ Recall that a Humphrey Voss was christened in London on 31 Dec 1648 at St Dunstan and All Saints, Stepney, Middlesex. He was the son of Humphrey Voss and his wife Elizabeth Voss. It is possible Humphrey returned from Virginia in time for the christening of a son if this is, indeed, the same man.

⁴⁶ After the Indian massacre of 1644, the General Assembly of Virginia thought of the defenseless frontier and set up on the frontier several forts. One of them is mentioned in the *Laws of Virginia* for October 1646: “And it is further enacted, That Capt. Roger Marshall shall have and enjoy for himselfe and his heires for ever the ffort Royall alias Ricahack ffort with sixe hundred acres of land adjoining to the same, with all houses and edifices belonging to the said forte and all boats and amunition belonging to the said ffort; provided that he said Capt. Marshall shall keepe and maintayne ten men vpon the place during the terme and time of three yeares, during which time he the said Capt. Marshall for himselfe and the said ten men are exempted from publique taxes. Grant of Fort Royal to Capt. Roger Marshall.”

ter, England note the christening of a William Crump on 4 Mar 1629 which could be the man in question, especially since, as we have already seen, this is the same parish in which Gerrard or Jared Hawthorne was christened.

For reasons unknown at present, Crump and Vault subsequently assigned this same 1,000 acres of land to Charles Woodington, whom we have previously encountered. This was actually carried out via two assignments both dated York County 7 Feb 1658. In the first, William Crump assigned his right in 500 acres to Charles Woodington. The agreement was signed by William and Anne Crump and witnessed by John Woodington and Richard Cooper. In the second assignment, Humphrey Vault assigned his right in 500 acres to Charles Woodington. This assignment was witnessed by Thomas and Mary Ludlow. Crump and Vault acknowledged the assignment in York County court on the same day.

It is clear that William Crump was married to Anne, as is stated in the assignment. However, there is no mention of a wife for Humphrey Vault, suggesting the possibility he was not married at this time. If this is the Humphrey Vault mentioned in the Saint Dunstan Stepney records in 1649 along with wife Elizabeth, it is possible Elizabeth had died by this date, or perhaps she simply remained in England with her children. In this context, recall the earlier discussion of the case of *Daniel Smith vs. William Crump*. In that case, William Crump is described as “attorney of Rebecca Vault decd.” Because of the Crump connection, Horsfall conjectures this Rebecca Vault may have been Humphrey’s wife. This case appears in the records under the date 31 Oct 1661, so we know Rebecca Vault died some time before this date. If she were Humphrey’s wife, she might have died before 7 Feb 1658 when Crump and Vault assigned their 1,000 acres to the Woodingtons.

As we have seen, on 3 May 1659 Humphrey Vault witnessed a power of attorney given by Thomas Ludlow. This was at the time that Ludlow and Elizabeth Vault, wife of Robert of London, were preparing to sail from Virginia to England on the “*William and John*.”

On 24 May 1660, Humphrey Vault gave his “well-beloved friend Gerrard Hawthorne” a power of attorney to acknowledge a sale of land to my “cousin Charles Woodington.” This attorney was witnessed by John Vaughan and William Crump.

On 12 Apr 1669, Humphrey Vault was mentioned as “friend” in the will of Patrick Napier of Hampton Parish, and on 3 Jan 1670, he was mentioned in the York County will of Jarrett Hawthorne of Marston Parish, York County.

There is a record from old New Kent County, Virginia dated 3 Oct 1670 that involved a proceeding to decide whether a certain tract of land in Stratton Major Parish belonging to a Ralph Mazey had

escheated by virtue of the owner being an alien (not a British subject).⁴⁷ The jury that decided the case consisted of Humphrey Vault, William Crumpe, and others.

On 30 May 1674, Robert Terrell gave a deposition in which he stated he knew Humphrey Vault, who was (Francis) Corie's "master in Virginia." In his statement, Terrell also said he identified the hand (writing) of Vault and of Richmond Terrell, his brother, who also lived in the Colony of Virginia. Recall that the will of Robert Terrell of the City of London, merchant, proved 23 Nov 1677, mentioned Mr. Robert Vault, merchant as a friend, and requested that he "be assisting to Executor in stating Virginia and other accounts."

Humphrey Vault was still living in Virginia in 1690, when Robert Vault of London, merchant, revoked a power of attorney given to him. Later, he is mentioned as Mr. Humphrey Volx in a York County court held 24 Mar 1691/92. This involved the suit brought by Peter Temple Jr. on behalf of his father, Peter Temple, Sr.

From this, it would appear that both Robert Vault and his brother Humphrey were still living in the early 1690s—Robert in London and Humphrey in Virginia. However, there is some evidence to suggest that Humphrey may have returned to London shortly after his last appearance in the Virginia records in March 1692. This comes from a tax levied in that city during 1693 and 1694, and called the "Four Shillings in the Pound Aid" tax. This was raised by Parliament to fund King William's involvement in a European war.⁴⁸ The surviving assessments cover the city of London, the city of Westminster, and a large area of both urban and rural Middlesex. Residence was an important factor since the tax was assessed and collected locally. Householders were taxed where they lived, while those known to be abroad were deemed resident at their last known English address. Those listed with a residence in Middlesex, St Dunstan Stepney, Hamlet of Ratcliffe, London Street included a "Humphrey Voss." His tax assessment was £1 based on a rental value assessment of £5. Incidentally, a "Mrs. Voss" is listed under Middlesex, St. Dunstan Stepney, Hamlet of Poplar and Blackwall. The assessments in this area suggest several people of some wealth lived there. She was assessed £0.6 based on property with a rental value of £3, and also assessed £0.6 based on stock valued at £50. The tax covered three sources of income including 4s (shillings) on the "yearly profits accruing to any personal estate in the form of ready moneys, debts owing, goods, wares, merchandises, other chattels or personalty belonging to or held in trust for them." The fact that she had stock valued at £50 might suggest there was money held

⁴⁷ See *The Virginia Genealogist*, vol. 19, p. 259.

⁴⁸ See Derek Keene, Peter Earle, Craig Spence, and Janet Barnes, *Four Shillings In The Pound Aid 1693/4 - The City of London, the City of Westminster, and Metropolitan Middlesex*, 1992.

in a trust for her. She may be related to the family of Robert Vaulx of London, but there is nothing to give us her actual identify.

John Vause of Middlesex County, Virginia

Another name that appears in the early records of Eastern Virginia is that of John Vause, whose name also appears in some records as Vaus, Vaux, Vaulx, Voss, and Vass. The writer has been unable to find direct proof to connect him with the line of Robert, Thomas, and Humphrey Vause; however, there is circumstantial evidence that suggests a link. For example, when this John Vaus died in Middlesex County, Virginia he left a will, dated 1679/80, with a wax seal affixed to it. Horsfall reports that Lyon G. Tyler, editor of *Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine*, examined this seal many years ago, and had this to say about it: "The seal is much defaced, but apparently the same as that of Vaux of Catterlyn; gules, a fesse chequy or, and of the field between three garbs of the second. The garbs can be plainly made out." Burke's *General Armoury* lists the same arms (name spelled Vaulx) for the Catterlyn Vaulxes, indicating that this John Vaus too descended from that line. William Stanard, in his *Extracts from the records of the counties of Old Rappahannock, Essex, Middlesex, King George, and Richmond*, includes a note on the will of John Vaus of Middlesex, about which he comments: "There is attached a seal bearing arms and crest; but nearly obliterated." In August 2000, the writer visited the Middlesex County Courthouse in Saluda and examined the will of John Vaus which is still on file there. The wax seal is still evident, but the writer is unable to say that the impression on it had the appearance ascribed to it by Tyler, primarily because of its greatly deteriorated state.

John Vause of Middlesex County, Virginia may be the John Voss, age 22, whose name is included in a list of those to be transported to Virginia in the ship, "*Transport of London*," Edward Walker master, which departed London on 4 Jul 1635. More probably, he is the man who appears in the Virginia records on 25 Jul 1638, when he was claimed as a headright by John George of "Charles Cittie" County—the record shows George transported himself and his wife, Jane, and sixteen others into Virginia.

Vause does not appear in a list of tithables of Lancaster County taken in 1654, before Middlesex was formed from the part of Lancaster on the south side of the Rappahannock River. However, as John Vaux, he appears in the records of old Rappahanock County on 4 Jun 1655, when Richard Coleman conveyed 600 acres in that county to him and to William Neale (?Veal). The tract was described as being a patent to the said Richard Coleman bearing date 14 7ber 1650 (14 Sep 1650). This tract, which adjoined the land of George Mosely, was on the south side of the Rappahannock in what is now Mid-

dlesex County. On 21 Nov 1655, Vause assigned 300 acres of this tract to Richard Beauford. Vause was apparently still in possession of part of this tract on 7 Oct 1663, when Coleman confirmed the title to Vaux as an "Estate of Fee Simple," apparently because there was some confusion over the quality of the title conveyed under the terms of the 4 Jun 1655 agreement.

The Lancaster County records detail a lengthy partnership agreement which Vause entered into with Edward Boswell, planter, on 3 Dec 1658. Under the terms of the "Articles of Agreement," he leased a plantation, belonging to Boswell for a term of twelve years. A John Vaulx appears in the records of York County, Virginia, on 24 May 1660, when a William Grant, judged to be fifteen years old and without an indenture, was ordered to serve his master, John Vaulx, until age twenty-one.

John Vause was very prominent in Middlesex County, and his name appears frequently in the public records there. He was called "Mr." and "gentleman," and was a Justice and clerk of the court. He was also a vestryman of Christ Church Parish whose register records the baptism of a daughter, Diana Vause, to John and Anne on 9 Apr 1662. The identity of this wife Anne is unknown. In any case, she was still living on 2 Dec 1664 because, on that date, John and Anne jointly witnessed a land deal with Richard Lewys, a planter who had land adjacent to John Beauford, son of Richard Beauford. However, John's wife was deceased by 14 Jun 1679 since, on that date, the records of Christ Church Parish show Vause remarried to Elizabeth Calloway. Vause himself died not long afterward as the parish register notes that "John Vause departed this life on 26 Feb 1679/80 and was buried in Mr. Christopher Robinson's orchard." This was Christopher Robinson who resided at Hewick Plantation near present-day Urbanna. There is still a house called Hewick standing there today, although it is very probably of later construction.

The will of Mr. John Vause, dated 22 Feb 1679/80 and proved 1 Mar 1679/80, names wife Elizabeth, a son John, and daughters Diana and Catherine. Executors named in the will include his wife Elizabeth, son John, Ralph Wormeley, Esq., and his "loving brother John Sheppard." Witnesses were Cuthbert Potter and Christopher Robinson.

At a court held in Middlesex on 19 Jul 1680, there is a proceeding involving guardianship of John Vause's orphans. It is noted that John and Diana "ye Orphants of Mr. John Vaus decd, being about ye age of ffourteene yeares apiece, have chosen Christr. Robinson to be their Gardian and he is by this Courte soe admitted." The proceeding goes on to record that "Constance Vaus one of ye Orphts: of Mr. John Vaus desireing that Christr. Robinson may be by this Courte appoynted her Guardian, it is consented to by this Courte and ye sd Christr. Robinson is appointed her Guardian."

In a further proceeding the court the following is recorded: "It is by this Courte ordered that ye Sheriff of this County doe Sumon (torn) Sander Smith, Mr. Humphrey Joanes, Mr. Richd. Willis &

Mr. John (torn) or that they or any three of them doe meete at ye Howse of Mr. John Vaus decd in this County upon ye 29th day of this Instant And that after there being Sworne before some one of his Mats. (torn) Peace of this County They make a true & equally Division of ye (torn) sd John Vause amongst ye Widdow & Orphants of ye said John (torn) to ye Will of ye said John Vause, and that one Shaire bee (torn) ye Childe Mrs. Vaus now goes with to be disposed of according (torn).” From this latter wording, it can be deduced that Mrs. Elizabeth Vaus was pregnant at the time of this court proceeding of July 1680. The Christ Church records indicate that Mrs. Elizabeth Vause did not survive long after the death of her husband as the records show she was buried on 25 Dec 1680. No further mention is made of “ye Childe Mrs. Vaus now goes with.”

The court record indicates that both the son John and daughter Diana were about fourteen years old in Jul 1680, indicating they were probably born about 1666—they could have been twins. There is no mention of the daughter Constance in the will of her father, nor is there further mention in the records of a Catherine Vaus. It is possible that the daughter Catherine mentioned in the will is the daughter Constance though there is no obvious reason for such a discrepancy in names.

The younger John Vause married twice. His first wife was Lettice Obert, daughter of Bartram or Bertram Obert. In Middlesex court there is a deed, dated 31 Mar 1683, from Christopher Robinson and Agatha, his wife, one of the daughters of Bertram Obert. Later Christopher Robinson petitioned Middlesex court relative to the estate of Bertram Obert stating that said Obert was “an alien born,” and left his estate to his son Chichester Obert (who died unmarried), and his two daughters, Agatha and Elizabeth. On Robinson’s petition, the heirs were allowed to inherit instead of the lands escheating as the property of an alien. (*Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, vol. xvi, pp. 106-7). It is not unlikely that Bertram Obert’s family name was originally spelled Hobert, and that he was described as “an alien born” from the fact that he was, though of English descent, born in Holland or France—there were many English people who went into Holland engaged in trade, including John Custis I.

On 10 Oct 1642, Bertrem Hobert received a patent for 650 acres on the north side of Charles (later, York) River “lying in Peemtanke (Piankitanke?) Creeke—the great creeke from Oyster shell banck; adjoining Mr. Vaus (i.e., Robert Vaulx); the said 650 acres due the said Bertrem Hobert by and for the transportation of 13 persons (*viz.*, head-rights) Bertrem Hobert, himself twice; Sarah, his wife; Francis Pepper, Francis Negro, Tho. Austin, his wife and twoe children, John Tredescant, Jon. Eyres, Edward Goulborne, Tho. Bawcocke” (Register of the Land Office, Patent Book, no. 1, p. 827). This is the only patent issued in the name of Hobert or Obert. The description of the land in the above patent places it as being almost certainly in what is now the northernmost part of Gloucester County (at one time York County—and still earlier, Charles River Shire), immediately opposite Middlesex County

(which at the date of the patent (1642) was within the territory, which, in 1650, became Lancaster County, and in 1675, Middlesex County). At a court held for York County, Virginia, on 27 Jan 1646, the following order was issued: “Ordd that John Peteet shall have attachment agst Est: of Burtrum Oberd, for security of a debt of 300 lb .: tob. And cask in regard the sd.: Oberd is gone out of the Colony to Maryland.” (*York County Records*, vol. 1633-48, p. 212).

With this clue, the *Maryland Archives* were consulted, and they showed that Bertram Obert transported himself into Maryland in 1645 along with his son Bertram, who was under sixteen years of age, and also a Dominick (?Rice). His land was ordered to be laid out on the Potomac River. On 31 Jan 1647, “Nicholas Gwythier brought wart. (warrant) upon oath of his Labour since the taking of St. Thomas’s Fort until ye last of Novr. 1646 as Followeth (an item): To Monsier Obert. I bar. At 150 . . .150 (*Patents*, Annapolis, Maryland, vol. ii, p. 296). Recd by Jno: Jarbo of Tho: Hatton, Gent., his Lordps Atto 575 lbs. Tobacco * * * out of ½ the Dutch Custome either as attorney for Bartram Obert, or otherwise by vertue of Act of Assembly in that be half of the 21st of April 1649.” (*Archives of Maryland: Official Business of the Provincial court 1649/50-1657*, p. 376).

On 24 Oct 1649, “John Jarbo demandeth 250 acres of land for an(d) on behalf of Bertram Obert and Bertram Obert, his son, under sixteen years of age and Dominick (?Rice) who transported themselves into this province in the year 1645. A warrant to the Surveyor was issued to lay out 250 acres for Bertram Obert and Dominick (?Rice) “upon Potowmack River or some branch or creek thereof return 1 January. On 4 Feb 1649 (1649/50) to the Honorable Lieutenant Generall: Laid out for Bartholomew (sic) Obert and Dominick (?Rice) a parcel of land lying on the east side of Bretton’s Bay on the east with a branch of said Bay called St. Lawrence Branch and on the north with a line drawn from a marked tree by the path at the head of St. Lawrence Branch until it fall into the said Bay, containing and now laid out for 200 acres more or less. Robert Clarke, Surveyor.” (*Patents*, Annapolis, Maryland, book 2, pp. 253, 607).

The next mention found of Obert is that Bertrum Obert was a head-right in a patent issued to William Lea, of Charles City County, Virginia, 6 Feb 1654 (*Register of Land Office*, patent book 3, p. 322). Evidently Bertram Obert returned to Virginia after living for some years in Maryland. It is not unlikely that he made one or more voyages across the seas, finally returning to Virginia in 1654.

Bertram Obert finally settled in Lancaster County, Virginia, in that portion on the south side of Rappahannock River that became Middlesex, County in 1675. He died there in Dec 1659 or Jan 1660. His Lancaster will is dated 30 Nov 1659, and was probated in Lancaster Court 25 Jan 1659/60. To his son Barham (Bertram) Obert, he devised land and Negroes; to son Chichester Obert, he devised land; to daughter Agatha Obert, land; and to wife Ann, land. He also divided his personalty among the same

legatees. (*Lancaster County Records*, quoted in *William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine*, vol. ii, p. 270). Agatha Obert, the daughter named in her father's will, married Christopher Robinson. It will be noticed that in the will of Bertram Obert (above quoted), the baptismal name of Bertram is spelled Barham. The surname is also spelled Hobert in the Lancaster and Middlesex County records.

In Dec 1674, Elizabeth Hobert chose Christopher Robinson as her guardian in Middlesex County (*Middlesex County Records*, Order Book i 1673-1680, p. 23). Obert's will also refers to a "child my wife now goes with." From other records, it can be shown that this posthumous child was a daughter named Elizabeth Obert.

Following Lettice's death, John Vause married, secondly, on 19 Jan 1687/88, Elizabeth Weekes, widow of Francis Weekes, who was a son of Abraham Weekes of Middlesex County. John and Elizabeth were the parents of Agatha Vause, who was christened in Christ Church Parish on 8 Sep 1689. On 27 Dec 1708, Agatha married James Curtis, son of James Curtis, who married Elizabeth Obert. James Curtis resided in Middlesex County where he left a will dated 2 Nov 1720 and proved 3 Jan 1720/21. James and Agatha Curtis had issue, Christopher Curtis, born 11 Apr 1714, who married Frances, last name unknown.

There is also some evidence that John Vause also had a daughter named Elizabeth. This is suggested by a Middlesex court record of 10 May 1697 that is a bond given by James Blaise, Tobias Mickleburgh and William Briscoe of Middlesex. Therein, it is stated "The Condition of this obligation is such that Whereas James Blaise is by the Justices appoynted gardian of Eliza Vause Daughter of John Vause dec'd as by an order of court dated 5th Aprill 1697 . . ." She is not mentioned in the will of her father, which is dated 8 Sep 1691. It mentions daughter Agatha, wife Elizabeth, nephews and nieces, William Daniel "the son of my sister Constance," James Curtis, Averilla Curtis and Chichley Curtis, "children of my loving sister Elizabeth Curtis," and nephew Christopher Robinson. Witnesses were Christopher Robinson and Abraham Weekes. The Christ Church Parish register notes that William Daniel married Constance Vause 24 Jul 1688. As will be seen below, Blaise was also named guardian of Agatha Vause.

William Daniel's will is dated 8 Oct 1694, and was witnessed by John Walker, William Downing and a man called Thomas Vaux who has already been discussed as having a possible link to Vincent Vause (Vass) who died in Essex County, Virginia in 1727. This Thomas could also be a descendant of Robert Vaulx, merchant of Virginia and London.

Agatha Vause was still an infant when her father died. The records of Middlesex indicate that James Blaise was appointed her guardian. In the Middlesex order books we find the case of *Blaise vs.*

Spencer, brought on 1 Jan 1699/1700. In the case, "James Blaise, Gardian of Agatha Vause daughter of John Vause dec'd plaintiffe in an Action of the Case against Thomas Spencer of this County now of King and Queen County became possessed of all singular the Goods and Chattells of the said John Vause dec'd, which said Estate now is and for severall years hath bee in his the said Spencers possession as by an Inventory and appraisement thereof amounteth to two hundred and Eight pounds three shillings and five pence sterling money the one half of which said same being one hundred and four pounds and one shilling and Eight pence halfe penny lawfully and Rightfully belongeth and ap(pointed) unto the said Agatha the daughter of the said John Vause dec'd and the said Thomas Spencer Refuses to make payment of the said sune."

A subsequent court proceeding of 2 September 1700 refers to "James Blaise Gardian of Agatha Vause daughter and Legatee of John Vause dec'd," and states that the orphan had one half of the estate, "the other halfe of the said deceased Vauses Estate being in the hands of Thomas Spencer who married the execu'x and Legatee of the said John Vause dec'd."

Following the death of Vause, his widow Elizabeth married, on 1 Jun 1692, Caleb Welling of Christ Church Parish Middlesex. Welling died 3 Sep 1692, whereupon the widow married thirdly Capt. Thomas Spencer of King and Queen County. He may have been the son of Robert Spencer who owned land in 1687 next to a 560 acre tract belonging to Col. John Walker, possibly the John Walker who witnessed the will of William Daniel. In 1683 Robert Spencer was one of sixty-five men petitioning for a popularly elected vestry in St. Stephen's Parish, New Kent (later King and Queen) County.

Notes on the Vass Family of Essex County, Virginia

Introduction

The name Vass (other documented variants include Vaus, Vause, Voss, Vaux, Vas, and Vaulx) appears in the records of the counties of Middlesex, Essex, King and Queen, Richmond, Caroline, Spotsylvania, Louisa, and elsewhere in Virginia at an early date. The earliest member of the Essex County Vass line the writer has been able to definitively identify is one Vincent Vass who first appears in the records of Middlesex County. In an order of Middlesex court dated 6 Mar 1681/82, judgment was granted to Thomas Haselwood against Vincent Vas (sic) "for ye summe of fiteene hundred twenty eight pounds of good & well sorted sweet scented tobacco and caske according to specialty,

with costs.”⁴⁹ Assuming that Vass was at least twenty-one years of age at this time, it appears certain he was born no later than about 1661, and probably before. A date of birth of about 1655 may not be unreasonable.

Given that the case was brought in Middlesex, it is possible Vass was living in that county at this early date. Indeed, as noted earlier, a John Vause family lived in Middlesex in the second half of the seventeenth century and, in some of the Middlesex records, members of this John Vause line appear with the surname spelled Vaux, Vaus, and even Vass. Both John Vause Sr. and John Jr. left wills, neither of which mentions the name Vincent Vass. However, it can be shown that there were other children of John Vause Sr. and Jr. that were not mentioned in their respective wills, so it is possible Vincent was a son of John Sr., or at least some connection.

In any case, it is clear Vincent Vass was living in adjacent old Rappahannock (later Essex) County by 2 Apr 1684, when the county court there noted that Vincent Vass “was imprest in the Countrys Service with himselfe and horse by order of Col Jno. Stone to bring down Corne and lumber belonging to the Rappa. Indians from their fort to the River side, which service he was employed nine dayes for satisfaction whereof is refered to the Assembly.”

The first evidence we have of the marriage of this Vincent Vass also comes from the records of old Rappahannock County. They demonstrate that Vass married Ann Sharpe, probably in late 1687. She was the daughter of John Sharpe of old Rappahannock, whose wife was named Judith. John and Judith Sharpe had other children including a son named John, and daughters Mary and Judith Sharpe. The records indicate that Mary was the eldest daughter and Ann the youngest. Mary married William Talbut (or Talbot) by whom she had a son, Thomas Talbut. From the evidence, it can be deduced that John Sharpe the elder died in the late 1660s, although no will or evidence of the administration of his estate has been found. It is also clear that his relict, Judith, thereafter married Thomas Harwar of old Rappahannock (Essex), a name we have seen before in these notes.

Ann Sharpe’s marriage to Vincent Vass was her third, she having previously married Thomas Roberts and then Thomas Gillett, both of old Rappahannock. According to an inventory of his estate, Roberts died about 1683. An age in a deposition he gave, as recorded in the court records of old Rappahannock County, indicates that Roberts was born about 1649. By her marriage to Roberts, Ann had one daughter named Judith, likely named for her mother, Judith Sharpe. What became of this daughter is not known.

⁴⁹ See Middlesex County Orders, 1680-1694.

Ann married her second husband, Thomas Gillett, soon after Roberts died, probably in 1683, or 1684. By Gillett, she had a daughter, Ann, who married Richard Cauthorn of Essex County, and a daughter Elizabeth, who was baptized in Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County. There are, in fact, two entries in the Christ Church Parish register that relate to Elizabeth Gillett. The first says for the year 1686, "christened &c. 27 Feb Elizabeth daughter to Thomas & Ann Jellett (sic) of Rappahannock." The second says: "Eliz(a) Gellet ye Daught(r) of Tho. & Ann Gellet baptized 27th of Ffebruary 1686." Based on naming patterns, it is likely Ann Gillett was her mother's second child, and therefore probably born before her sister Elizabeth. This would suggest a date of birth for Ann Gillett of about 1684, or 1685.

We know that Ann Sharpe married Vincent Vass of Essex some time between 3 Aug 1687, when Gillett served on a jury in Rappahannock County, and 6 Jun 1688, when old Rappahannock court granted administration to Vincent Vass "as marrying the relict of Thomas Gillett, deceased." If we assume Vincent Vass was born about 1655, then he would have been in his 30s when he married Ann. Since men often married in their early to mid-20s, it is possible Vass may have been previously married.

Although Vincent Vass was unable to write his name, the many references to him in the records show that he was a planter of some standing, and well respected by family and friends. His marriage to Ann Sharpe brought him 500 acres of land, which Ann had inherited under the terms of the will of John Penn of old Rappahannock. Penn's will, dated 13 Jan 1676, devised to Ann Sharpe his plantation along with £50 sterling money of England. Penn also left £50 to Ann's sister, Judith, and the same amount to Elizabeth Harwar, daughter of Thomas Harwar. The money was to be delivered to the girls on their day of marriage. In his will, Penn also left personal property to Edward Dracas, Thomas Cocker, and Mary Peyton. Additionally, he left to Thomas Talbutt, son of William Talbutt, a mare. The will also provided that if Ann Sharpe died without issue, then her share was to go to Thomas Harwar.

The records of Essex County show that Vincent Vass and his wife Ann conveyed half of the 500 acres Ann received from Penn to Edward Thomas of Essex. The deed, dated 10 Feb 1692, described the tract as a parcel of land containing 250 acres where Vause (sic) and his wife "lately lived." When Edward Thomas died, he left a provision in his will conveying this same 250 acres of land to the vestry of South Farnham Parish to be used as a glebe farm. In this regard, it is worth noting that the wording of John Penn's will gave rise to a legal case that involved Lewis Latane (also seen in the records as La-

tany), the minister of South Farnham Parish at the time, who was residing on this glebe land.⁵⁰ The 1730 case called *Legan & Vause vs. Latany*, was one of ejectment, and is reported in a compilation based on cases in the General Court of Virginia from about 1726-1743, as reported by Sir John Randolph and Edward Barradall Esq. These court cases are contained in a two volume set, *Virginia Colonial Decisions*, by Major R.T. Barton. In its opinion, the court states that Ann Sharpe married Vincent Vause (sic) and had issue by him John Vause (sic), her son and heir. The wording goes on to note that Vause and his wife conveyed the land in question to Edward Thomas in fee, and Edward Thomas, by his will dated 28 May 1699, “Devised the Lands to the Parish of South Farnham for a Glebe And the Minister of that parish hath ever since enjoyed it as such And Latany is now Parson of the parish.” This case is important because it establishes without doubt that, by his marriage with Ann Sharpe, Vincent Vause or Vass, as he is more commonly called in later records, had a son named John. Moreover, given that Vincent married Ann Sharpe in 1687 or 1688, John Vass was probably born about this same time.

The Virginia Quit Rent roll of 1704 for Essex County shows that Vincent Vaus (sic) was charged with 450 acres of land, which probably included 250 out of the 500 acres of land Ann inherited from John Penn. Despite a search of the records in the Essex County Courthouse, the writer has been unable to find any record of how Vincent Vass may have acquired the other 200 acres, presumably the tract he was residing on at the time of his marriage to Ann, in 1687 or 1688. The Virginia land records do not mention the name Vincent Vass as a headright, and this could suggest he was born in Virginia. Vincent named his only known son, John. Following the naming pattern commonly used in colonial Virginia, a father named his first son after his father (the child’s grandfather), so this could possibly indicate that the name of Vincent’s father was John Vass, or Vause.

John Vass, son of Vincent and Ann, first appears in the records of Essex on 10 Mar 1707/08 when he, along with William Bennet and William Wayd, proved the will of John Ball, whose executrix was Ball’s wife, Eleanor. Securities on the wife’s bond were provided by Thomas Meriwether and Henry Woodnut, and the witnesses were Edward Gouldman and James Alderson. Ball’s will, dated 20 Apr 20, 1699, described him as “now in St. Stephen’s Parish, King and Queen County.” The Essex records indicate that Ball’s widow, Eleanor, subsequently married Vincent Vass some time before 27 Apr 1709 since, on that date, Eleanor Vass of Essex executed a conveyance “to my son in law John Vass of same for natural affection 150 acres purchased by my late husband John Ball of Henry Woodnut and by John

⁵⁰ Details concerning Lewis Latane or Latany can be found in the book by Lucy Temple Latane called *Parson Latane, 1672-1732* (Charlottesville, VA: The Michie Company Printers, 1936). The Latane family papers can be found in the library at the University of Virginia, Charlottesville.

Ball given to me.” So, it would appear that Ann Sharpe, wife of Vincent Vass, had died some time prior to this date. Further evidence of the marriage of Vincent Vass to Eleanor Ball is provided by an Essex deed of 12 Apr 1711 in which John Vass of Essex conveys to his brother-in-law, Henry Hudson, and his wife Catherine, whom Vass describes as his sister, for natural affection, 150 acres purchased by John Ball of Henry Woodnott. This was, of course, the land given by Eleanor to her son in law, John Vass.

If Ann Sharpe, wife of Vincent, died some time prior to 27 Apr 1709, this raises a question as to the identity of the Ann Vass who, along with Vincent Vass and Henry Rose, witnessed the will of John Jinkinon of Essex on 4 Sep 1710. It seems likely she is also the same individual described in an Essex record of 22 May 1717 in which the court dismissed the suit “between Anne ye Wife of Vincent Vass Plt. & Ann Bradbury deft.” This Ann Bradbury may have been the wife of Richard Bradburys (sic) mentioned in the will of Peter Brooke of Essex. Brooke’s will, written 10 Apr 1710 and proved 25 Feb 25 1709/10, mentions a wife, Anne Brooke, son-in-law Samuel Stephens, and brother, Thomas Brooke. The will was witnessed by John Ball, Thomas Brooke, Thomas Beeson, and Richard Bradburys. On 10 Apr 1710, the widow, Anne Brooke, secured a bond on the probate of her husband’s estate, with security on the bond given by Vincent Vass and Lewis Latane.

Since Vincent’s wife, Eleanor Vass, is not mentioned in the records after her deed of gift of 27 Apr 1709, it is possible she died and Vincent married again to someone named Ann—possibly the widow, Anne Brooke. Another possibility is that the Ann Vass, who witnessed Jinkinon’s will, may have been the wife of another Vincent Vass, possibly the son of Vincent (who was born about 1655) by an earlier wife than Ann Sharpe. If so, it would seem this younger Vincent must have died prior to 12 Nov 1713, because on that date, the records of Essex County show that Vincent Vass, planter of South Farnham Parish, executed a deed of gift to his son John of that plantation “whereon he now li- veth” in South Farnham Parish, together with two Negroes, Stock &c. The conveyance also recites that the gift was made in consideration of “that entire love and tender regard I have **for my only Son John Vass** (emphasis added) of the said parish.” Witnesses were Lewis Latane and William Wayde, and Vass signed by a mark.

In an effort to investigate whether there might have been more than one Vincent Vass in early Essex County, the writer examined available records in the courthouse at Tappahannock, the county seat of Essex, signed by a Vincent Vass, all of which were signed by mark. It should be noted that all these documents are copies of the originals made by the various clerks of court of the time, so it is unclear just how accurately the old marks were reproduced by the clerks. In any case, in three of these—a 12 Nov 1713 deed of gift from Vincent to his only son John Vass; a 21 Mar 1721 appraisal of the estate of

John Twisdell; and the 1727 will of Vincent Vass—the mark looks like the capital Greek letter “Lambda,” or “Λ.” However, in four others—the 11 Jan 1709 will of Samuel Green witnessed by Vass; the 15 Feb 1709 will of Peter Brooke witnessed by Vass; a bond of 10 Apr 1710 posted by Ann Brook on which Vass was surety; and the 11 Jul 1712 will of John Jenkinson witnessed by Ann and Vincent Vass—the mark looks like a script “z.” In addition to these documents, there are two others of interest. The first is a 10 Feb 1692 deed by which Vincent and Ann Vause (sic) conveyed 250 acres of land to Edward Thomas. Both Vincent and Ann signed by mark. Here, Vincent’s mark looks somewhat like the following “Ur” symbol. Second, there is an 11 Aug 1699 appraisal of the estate of Roger Jones signed by Vincent Vass. Here, the mark looks somewhat like a capital script letter “Q.” Neither of these marks looks much like the other two discussed above. About the only thing that can be said as regards this investigation of marks is that there is some slight evidence to support the view that there could have been more than one man named Vincent Vass who appears in the records of Essex prior to 1727, with one—the man who with Ann Vass proved the will of John Jenkinson—seemingly disappearing from the records after 11 Jul 1712. Was he, perhaps, a son of Vincent (ca. 1655-1727) who died about this time?

Besides the 1704 Essex quit rent role mentioned previously, there is another rent role taken in the year 1715. It shows only one Vincent Vass, and he was charged with 250 acres of land, while a John Vass, his son, was charged with 490 acres. Unless Vincent Vass, who married Ann Sharpe, acquired or disposed of land between the years 1704 and 1715, and a search of the Essex records did not disclose such transactions, it seems he must have conveyed 200 acres to his son John in the deed of gift of 12 Nov 1713. Regrettably, a search of the Essex records made by the writer failed to show how John Vass acquired the other 290 acres he owned in 1715 other than, possibly, through his marriage to Rachel Pendleton, daughter of Philip Pendleton of then King and Queen County.

Vincent Vass, who was born about 1655, drew his will in Essex on 18 Dec 1726, and it was proved 19 Sep 1727 by his son John Vass. By its terms, Vincent devised unto his daughter Katherine Hudson a feather bed and bolster, a rug, pair of blankets, a small looking glass, warming pan, four leather chairs, his riding horse, named “Doctor,” and £20 current money. Vass gave his daughter-in-law (i.e., step-daughter) Ann Cauthorn, wife of Richard Cauthorn, four cows. To his grandchildren, Thomas and John Blatt, Vass gave each a cow. Unto his grandson, Vincent Vass, whom the testator called “son of John Vass,” he left a Negro named Bess. Finally, Vass left his son John all the remainder of his estate, which would have included the 250 acres adjacent to the glebe tract of South Farnham Parish. Witnesses to the will were Joshua Boughton and Isaac Hudson Sr.

Thomas and John Blatt were sons of Thomas Blatt, who left a nuncupative (oral) will in Essex that is dated 11 Dec 1720.⁵¹ It was presented at court by John Vass, Blatt's executor. John Vass, together with Vincent Vass and William Broocke, his securities, posted bond. In this will, Thomas Blatt expressed his desire that his two children should live with John Vass, styled "uncle to his children." The court proceedings show that Blatt died the day after he made his will. Thomas Blatt's wife was undoubtedly a daughter of Vincent Vass, and therefore sister to John and Katherine, but a search of the records has failed to reveal her given name, or when she died.

As noted, the 18 Dec 1726 will of Vincent Vass mentions grandson Vincent Vass "son of John." If this Vincent was the son of the testator, this raises a question as to what became of him, because he was not mentioned in John's will, written 13 Jan 1753, and proved 15 Apr 1755. Other children were, however, mentioned, including Philip Vincent Vass⁵², described in the will as John's "eldest son," John Vass, Henry Vass, Reuben Vass, Ann Brooks, and deceased daughter, Catherine Jones, and her children, Martha and Ann Jones. The wording of John's will, "all my children," suggests that these were indeed all of John's children living when he wrote his will. Even so, John's continuing relationship with another Vincent Vass does support the view that this Vincent was indeed John's son, and simply not included in the will for some reason. More will be said about this Vincent later.

John Vass family

As has already been discussed, John Vass, son of Vincent who died in 1727, married Rachel Pendleton of King and Queen County, Virginia. John drew his will on 13 Jan 1753. In it, he named the following children: Philip Vincent Vass, John Vass (Jr.), Henry Vass, Reuben Vass, Ann Brooks (sic), and deceased daughter Catherine Jones and her children Martha and Ann Jones. Only short discussions of these children are included here.

⁵¹ A Thomas Blatt was a witness to the Middlesex County will of Richard Perrot, the elder. Dated 20 Jul 1686, the will was proved 7 Feb 1686/87. The other witnesses were Ann Bray and Margaret Price.

⁵² There was a Phillip Vinson in the early records of York County, Virginia, where Robert Vaulx and his family lived. He is probably the man of that name transported to Virginia by Richard Coleman, who received a patent dated 27 Oct 1652 for 600 acres on the south side of the Rappahannock River. Interestingly, and as has already been seen, this is the same Richard Coleman who appears in the records of old Rappahanock County on 4 Jun 1655, when he conveyed this same 600 acres to John Vaux and William Neale, or Veal. In any case, Phillip Vinson was living in York County by 24 Aug 1657, when the will of Roger Lewis of York was proved in court by the oaths of Phillip Vinson and John Insworth. Lewis left his estate to his three children and made Humphrey Tompkins their guardian and executor of their estate. In some early records, the name Vincent Vass is spelled Vinson Vass and there is one instance of the name Philip Vinson Vass. Could the family name "Vincent" or "Vinson" come from a marriage between a Vaulx and a Vinson or Vincent?

Philip Vincent Vass

Under the terms of his father's will, John's eldest son, Philip Vincent Vass, inherited the 250 acres which John had acquired from his father, Vincent who died in 1727. This was half of the 500 acres Ann Sharpe inherited from John Penn. Because Philip Vincent Vass was already residing in Spotsylvania County, Virginia at the time he inherited this property, he offered this tract for sale soon after it came into his possession. This is proved by an advertisement of 9 May 1755 in the *Virginia Gazette*, which reads:

Philip Vincent Vass advertises for sale to the highest bidder 250 acres in Essex County on Rappahannock River about two miles below Bowler's Warehouse, with dwelling house, apple and peach orchards. The place is also convenient for fishing and oystering, being joining to the river. Purchasers may apply to Vass, living in Spotsylvania County near Mr. Zachary Lewis, or to Major Rice Curtis of the Assembly.

Further insight into the exact location of this 250 acre tract can be found in the 1957 book, *Old Homes of Essex*, under the heading, "The Old Glebe," which reads as follows:

On the top of the hill overlooking the (Rappahannock) river there are just a few bricks left in the field to mark the location of the Old Glebe of South Farnham Parish. This land was left by will of Captain Edward Thomas to the parish in 1699 and was occupied for many years by the Rev. Lewis Latane. It remained the Glebe of South Farnham Parish until 1803. Mark Haven Beach now includes the land of the Old Glebe.

In later times, this tract was called "South Hill," and is described as situated on the range of hills overlooking the Rappahannock three miles below Center Cross on routes 502 and 644. Unfortunately the old house there, parts of which may have dated to the colonial period, burned in 1972. A member of the Ware family of Essex, with whom the writer is acquainted, states that he owns an old chest of drawers which he purchased many years ago at an estate sale held at "South Hill.

The Essex land records prove that that Philip Vincent Vass, son of John Vass of Essex, sold the "South Hill," tract in 1757 to William Roane of Essex, who subsequently devised it to his son, Thomas Roane.

Philip Vincent Vass married Mary Curtis who was born in Middlesex County, Virginia on 18 Mar 1726. She was the daughter of Rice Curtis of Middlesex County, and his wife Martha Thacker, whom he married in Middlesex on 26 Dec 1723. Rice Curtis Jr. and his wife Martha had several children in addition to daughter Mary who married Philip Vincent Vass. They included Martha, who married Henry Pendleton, Elizabeth, who married John Waller Jr., Frances who married William Carter, and

Jane Curtis. Rice Curtis was the son of another Rice Curtis who married Elizabeth Montague, nee Merry, relict of Peter Montague of Middlesex County. This Rice, in turn, was the son of Giles Curtis of Essex, whose wife was Mary, last name unknown, and Giles Curtis was the son of Bartholomew Curtis by his wife Jane, last name unknown. Bartholomew Curtis was son of Thomas Curtis who immigrated to Virginia with his brother John. The records show that Thomas Curtis, age 24, and John Curtis, age 22, came to Virginia in 1621 in the ship “*Flying Harte.*”

Philip Vincent Vass and his wife Mary Curtis had at least five children including John (eldest), Rice (2nd son), Philip Vincent Vass Jr., Martha, and Rachel. Philip Vincent Vass Jr. was born 17 Feb 1763 in Spotsylvania County, Virginia, according to an application he filed in 1834 for a pension based on his Revolutionary War service. He also stated in this application that he had lived in Spotsylvania whole life. Philip Vincent Vass Jr. married Sarah Mead in Louisa County, Virginia. The marriage bond is dated 28 Dec 1780. They had several children, including Thomas Vass (1782 – 1851), Walker Vass, and Henry Vass. There were likely other children, including daughters.

Thomas Vass, b. ca. 1782 in Spotsylvania, died 10 May 1851 in Hopkinsville, Christian County, Kentucky. He married a lady named Mary, but her surname is not known. The 1850 federal census shows Thomas (age 68), Henry J. Vass (age 35), Mary M. Vass (age 34), Virginia Vass (age 31), Amanda Melvina Vass (age 27), Susan B. Vass (age 24), Thomas L. Vass (age 25) and Thursey J. Vass—all born in Kentucky. Another son, Madison D. Vass was born in 1810 and may be the oldest. He married Adelia A. Vass in the 1860s in Hopkinsville.

Walker Vass lived in Orange County, Virginia. He married Francis Lee there on 12 Nov 1815 (bond). Witnesses were Thomas and Mary Vass, and the bride's father, William Lee.

Henry Vass was born in 1799 and married in Spotsylvania to Lucy Jackson—marriage bond dated 30 Nov 1824. Henry and his wife Lucy moved to Caroline County, Virginia for a while, then to Hanover County. Their children included Elizabeth J., Rachel A., Thomas Isiah, James Philip, Henry Jackson Clay, Mary Frances, and Joseph A. Vass. Henry Jackson Clay Vass was born ca. 1832 in Caroline County. He served in the Confederate Army during the Civil War. He married Mollie A. Davis, daughter of John J. Davis, and they had four sons: Luther S. Vass, Charles B. Vass, Walter Vass, and Linwood Vass, all of Hanover County.

John Vass Jr.

Despite considerable effort, the writer has been unable to develop a detailed understanding of this son of John Vass and Rachel Pendleton. He appears in the order books of Richmond County, Virginia,

in Oct 1752. The record mentions John Vass, John Vass Jr., and Hannah Vass, his wife, as executors of Thomas Blatt, deceased, as plaintiffs against William Beale, the surviving executor of Daniel Hornby of Richmond County. The action was in debt. As noted earlier, Thomas and John Blatt were the son of Thomas Blatt who married a daughter of Vincent Vass of Essex, who died in 1727. This Thomas Blatt left a nuncupative, proved in Essex court in 1720, and presented in court by John Vass, his executor. This record seems to suggest that John Jr. had a wife named Hannah. However, there is a Louisa County, Virginia deed of 28 Oct 1752 from John Vass Jr. of Essex County, and Ann his wife, to William Todd, called "loving son," of said county for a tract on Negro Creek taken up by John Davis and subsequently conveyed to Vass by Philip Aylett.⁵³ In fact, there is an earlier Louisa County deed, this one dated 18 May 1749, from John Vass Jr. of Essex. It involves part of a patent made to John Aylett of 10 Jan 1734.

The book of Essex County deeds covering the period 1749-1752 contains a poll of freeholders for electing Burgesses in the county taken by William Upshaw Davis for Francis Waring, Gent., Sheriff. It is dated 15 Jan 1752 and notes that Vincent Vass voted for Maj. Francis Smith, while John Vass Sr. and John Vass Jr. voted for Col. Thomas Waring.

In 1768, the name John Vass appears in a Middlesex County record. Since this is after his father died in 1755, the entry may pertain to John Vass Jr. Vass was a plaintiff and Thomas Fearn was the defendant. In the case, on an action in detinue, the plaintiff claimed the defendant had detained certain negro slaves belonging to him. The case was continued several times, the last being on the date 6 Sep 1768. However, the order book carries an additional entry dated 4 Jan 1769, which mentions the suit had been abated by the death of Vass. Despite a detailed search, no information regarding the probate of the estate of this John Vass has been located.

So, if this was John Vass Jr., then who was the man of the same name mentioned in the deed books of Essex County, which record a bargain and sale dated 22 Nov 1770 from John Vass of Essex to James Johnson of the same county. The sale involved one gray mare, a cow, two beds, a large chest, a table and chairs, and an iron pot. Witnesses to the deed were James Webb and John Webb Jr.

The 1783 Essex County tax list for the second district lists both a John and a William Vass. Both names appear again in the 1787 list. This same William Vass appears in the Middlesex County records in March 1777 when he was a plaintiff in a case against William Taylor. William was again in court in Middlesex in May of the same year, and the order book notes that John Evans was one of the garnishees in an attachment brought by William Seager and Vass against Taylor. William appears again on 20

⁵³ Could this Ann, called wife of John Vass Jr., be the same lady as the "Hannah" mentioned in the Richmond County record?

Apr 1778 in a Richmond County account book record that mentions Col. Samuel Peachey and the estate of a Mr. Flood. The name Lodowick Jones appears in the same account. Records confirm that this William Vass married Elizabeth St. John, daughter of Thomas St. John of Essex, and the will of Thomas St. John, dated 25 Apr 1780, and proved 17 Jul 1780, refers to William as his “son-in-law.” William Vass appears again in Middlesex when he appeared in court there in July 1784 in a case against Samuel Moore. It involved an attachment for 3,500 pounds of current money. The sheriff was directed to sell certain personal property (items mentioned included household furniture), and apply the proceeds toward satisfaction of the debt. The order book notes the defendant failed to appear and a default was entered against him. William Vass must have died some time in 1787 or 1788, because the Essex County order books of that period record that, on the motion of Henry Vass, a certificate was granted to him for obtaining letters of administration on the estate of William Vass, deceased, with Smith Young his security. The court ordered James Evans, William Brooke, “Clar. Sanders,” and Thomas Boughton to appraise the estate. An inventory was entered into court on 15 Feb 1788.

The court records of Essex also contain the will of a John Vass of South Farnham Parish. It was proved 8 Jan 1800. In it, Vass leaves to his “sister,” Anna Johnson, all his tract of land where he was then living—during her widowhood—along with his house and kitchen furniture. Then, at her death, both real and personal property were to descend to “nephew,” James Johnson. Witnesses included Philip Allen and Thomas Brooke.

From the foregoing, it is believed that John Vass Jr. died some time before 4 Jan 1769. It is also believed that the John and William Vass who appear in various records subsequent to this date are his sons. Moreover, it is also clear from the Essex records that William Vass left a son named John. This is proved by the Essex orders, which record that, at a court of 20 Jan 1794, on the motion of John Evans, “ordered that the overseers of the poor bind John Vass orphan of William Vass to Henry Newbill, and that same be certified.” This is probably the John Vass mentioned in another Essex record, a deed of 16 Mar 1818. In it, this John Vass conveys a tract of 78 ½ acres to John Newcomb in Essex (boundaries refer to John Cauthorn’s line, Gatewood’s mill pond, and Muses line). Interestingly, in this deed, Vass is styled as of “King William County.” However, in another deed of the same date, it appears the deed from Vass to Newcomb involved two trustees, Lawrence Muse and Joseph Janey of Essex. In this deed, Vass is styled as of “King and Queen County.” It seems that one or the other of these deeds is in error. Incidentally, this Joseph Janey was a merchant who built the house called “Mount Verde” still standing in lower Essex, in the general vicinity of “South Hill” plantation. Lawrence Muse was a businessman.

So, if William Vass, who died some time before 20 Jan 1794 and John Vass who died before 8 Jan 1800 were brothers, and both sons of John Vass Jr., then it may be that John Jr. also had a daughter, Anna Vass, who married Mr. Johnson, the father of James Johnson mentioned in the will of John Vass proved in 1800. It is possible John Vass Jr. had other children as well whose names have eluded the writers.

Henry Vass

Henry Vass, who is mentioned above as the administrator of the estate of William Vass, was another son of John Vass who died in Essex in 1755. Bishop Meade says that both John Vass and his son Henry were members of the Vestry of South Farnham Parish in Essex County, and their names appear in still extant vestry records.⁵⁴

Henry's first wife was Martha, but her last name is unknown. Some time in the third quarter of the eighteenth century, Henry removed from Essex to Middlesex County, where he served as sheriff and as a member of the vestry of Christ Church Parish. So he was clearly a well respected man. Following Martha's death, Henry remarried, this time to a lady named Catherine Turner. The Middlesex marriage bond is dated 24 Jan 1774. Henry's children included a son, Henry Jr., and daughters Martha, Catherine, and Elizabeth. The register of Christ Church Parish shows that Thomas Churchill was a surety and witness on the marriage bond of 7 May 1792, between William Jackson and Martha Vass. There is also a marriage bond in Middlesex, dated 5 Aug 1792, for the marriage of Richard Lee and Elizabeth Vass. Finally, there is a Middlesex marriage bond, dated 20 Dec 1787, for the marriage of Thomas Montague to Catherine Vass.

Henry's son, Henry Vass Jr., married Elizabeth Pryor of Middlesex. The bond is dated 22 Nov 1779. The Middlesex records mention the will of Mr. William Pryor, dated 33 May 1786. The administration proceedings says that, at the time of his death, Martha and Caty Vass heard his last will and testament in which he left his estate to his wife and children. Witnesses were Henry Vass and Saunders Bristow.

Henry Vass Jr. was an officer in the Middlesex militia during the Revolution. This is proved by an order of Middlesex court of 23 Sep 1782, which contains a list of militia officers, including that of Henry Vass Jr. Another list of 28 Oct 1782 refers to Henry Vass Jr. as a 2nd Lt. in the militia. Evidence shows that he predeceased his father, having died about 1790 or 1791, because at Middlesex court held

⁵⁴ A copy of these vestry records are at the state library in Richmond, Virginia, and have been examined by the writer.

24 Jan 1791 his father was granted administration of the estate of Henry Jr., with John Jackson his surety. It also seems he died intestate, as there is no evidence of a will, nor is there any indication he had children.

Henry Vass himself died in 1798, and a Middlesex court of 9 Jul 1798 granted administration of his estate to Thomas Montague, probably his son-in-law. The order also mentions the payment of fees paid to the clerk of the courts of both King and Queen and Essex, suggesting he may have had property in those counties as well. In addition, the court also granted a judgment against John Vass of Essex. This is probably the John Vass Jr. (son of John who died in 1755).

There is also a Middlesex County will for Catherine Vass, probably the wife of Henry Vass Sr. It is dated 23 Nov 1797, and was proved 22 Jan 1798. It names nephew, William Montague, and niece Catherine Montague. In it, she also leaves money to her niece Charlotte Montague Jr. for the education of her children. Also mentioned are Thomas Montague, Thomas Montague, son of Thomas, nephew Thomas Montague, son of Philip, and niece Frances Healy. The will also mentions her brother, Philip Montague, and his children. The Middlesex court records also contain an inventory of her estate. Dated 28 Jun 28 1802, it lists the children of Philip Montague *viz.*, Charlotte, Frances, Catherine, Penelope, Philip, Elizabeth, William, Latane, and Martha Montague and the children of Thomas Montague dec'd, *viz.*, Catherine and Sarah. It is signed Thomas Healy Jr. and his wife, Frances.

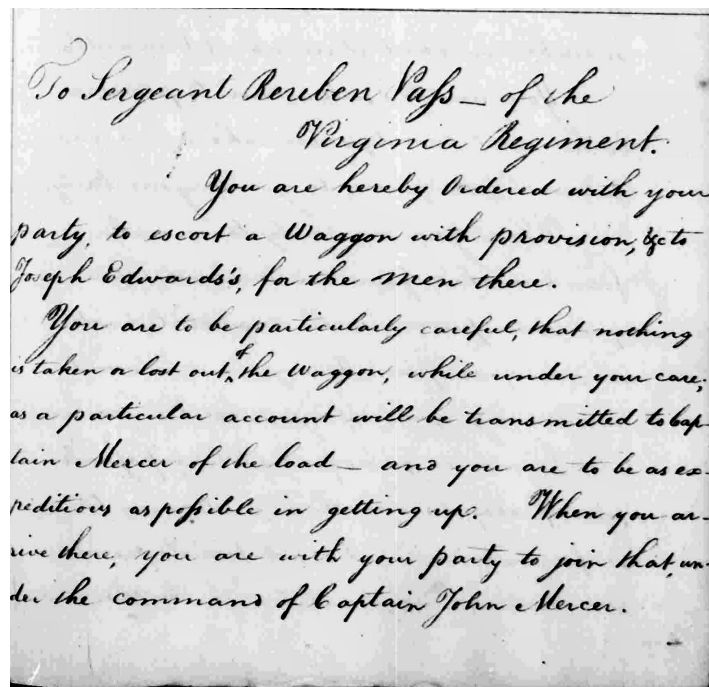
As will be seen later, Thomas Vass of King and Queen moved to Granville County, North Carolina in the latter part of the 18th century. Considering that fact, it is useful to note that the Granville records contain the will of Lattany (Latane) Montague, and a codicil dated 24 Aug 1811, and proved Nov court 1811 in Granville. It mentions the following children: Henry, Young, Martha Knight, William, daughter Charlotte Owen, and daughter Frances Graves. It also names his wife, Catharine Montague, and grandchildren: Martha, Frances, Lattany, Andrew and, Sarah (or Susanna) and Gregory, "when each is of age." Also mentioned is son-in-law Nathaniel Graves. The will was witnessed by James ?Pittard, and the codicil by Henry Yancey, James ?Pittard, and Thomas Vass.

Reuben Vass

Reuben Vass is mentioned in an order of Caroline court of 10 Feb 1780 that notes that he served in the French and Indian War until discharged in 1758. Again, in March 1780, the court notes that four warrants of 500 acres each were awarded to Reuben Vass in 1758 and 1762 for service in different regiments during the French and Indian war. The record also states that Reuben Vass had a warrant for

2,000 acres from the first campaign. The *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* contains a note on the Chiles family of Virginia, which says that Reuben Vass was assigned two military warrants for a total of 1,000 acres he received in 1763, and that this land was granted in Fayette County, Kentucky, by Patrick Henry, then Governor of Virginia.

Vass was recruited by Captain William Peachy of the Virginia Regiment, and appears on 15 Oct 1755 on Peachy's roll, where it is noted that Vass was twenty-four years old (born about 1732), and from Essex County, Virginia. Also on this same roll, Vass was described as a joiner by trade, of ruddy complexion, with black curly hair, and being 5' 9 ½ inches tall. On 15 Apr 1756, George Mercer wrote to Vass the letter shown in the figure below, taken from the Washington papers in the Library of Congress.



To Sergeant Reuben Vass— of the
Virginia Regiment.
You are hereby ordered with your
party, to escort a Waggon with provision, to
Joseph Edwards's, for the men there.
You are to be particularly careful, that nothing
is taken or lost out of the Waggon, while under your care,
as a particular account will be transmitted to Cap-
tain Mercer of the load— and you are to be as ex-
peditious as possible in getting up. When you ar-
rive there, you are with your party to join that, un-
der the command of Captain John Mercer.

Vass is listed on another of Capt. Peachey's rolls, this one taken 14 Aug 1756 at Fort Cumberland, Virginia. Vass is also mentioned in a military size roll for Col. George Washington—this one taken 28 Aug 1757—repeats that he enlisted in Sep 1755 from Essex County, age 25.

Mary Kegley, in her book, *Early Adventurers on the Western Waters*, discusses Fort Chiswell in present-day Wythe County, Virginia, and recounts activities in and around the area during the French and Indian War. In doing so, she mentions a regiment stationed at Sayers' Mill sent there to help protect the frontier:

Although the regiment was ordered to continue on the frontier, Colonel (William) Byrd and most of the army did not remain at Sayers' Mill. However, Major Andrew Lewis, Captain Thomas Bullit, Lieutenant William Fleming, Lieutenant Walter Cunningham, Lieutenant Reuban (sic) Vass, Ensign (Burton) Lucas, and Ensign (George) McKnight remained at the site and were provided with extraordinary rations from November 20, 1760 until May 1, 1761.

Reuben was of age by 6 Dec 1752, when he first appears in the records of Middlesex County, and gave bond to William Jones of Gloucester County. The bond was witnessed by John Jones Jr. and John Sears (?Sayers). On 5 Jun 1754, Vass again appears in the Middlesex records. The proceedings mention John Metcalfe, merchant, assignee of Vincent Vass, who "complains of William Jones." William Jones' note was witnessed by Reuben Vass. There is a 29 Mar 1755 receipt in the court records of Middlesex signed by Reuben Vass. Perhaps because of the debts he owed, Reuben fled to South Carolina. Indeed, there is a record of him there in a book on wills recorded in Charleston (Will Book SS, 1771-74). The abstract is for a will of Jared Neilson (Nelson in some records), Jr., of St. Mark's Parish. It mentions his mother, Margaret, and leaves to his brother Charles, and to George Neilson, the residue of his estate. The will also mentions John Neilson, Sr., of the same parish, and refers to brothers in Ireland. Executors were Jared Neilson, Sr., of St. Matthew's Parish and cousin, John Neilson, Sr. The will was witnessed by Reuben Vass, Daniel Connor, and Randolph Platt. The will is dated February 1772, so Vass must have been in South Carolina by this date. In fact, Reuben was named in a Spotsylvania County record of 2 Mar 1774 that mentions that John Waller, a minister of Spotsylvania, as having large debts due him by Vass "who resides in South Carolina." A power of attorney was give to William Arnold of Caroline County, Virginia to collect same, suggesting the possibility that Reuben had property in Caroline at the time. The name Reuben Vass also appears in a notice published in the *Virginia Independent Chronicle*, on Aug 26, 1789:

Christ. Greenup, C(lerk of the) S(uperior) C(ourt), advertises three suits in chancery in the Supreme court for the District of Kentucky at the courthouse at Danville. John Stewart against Benjamin Craig, Reuben Vass and Vincent Vass; John Stewart against John Chiles, Reuben Vass and Vincent Vass; and John Stewart against William Ellis, Reuben Vass and Vincent Vass. In each, the first defendant not having entered his appearance, the order was to be published in the *Virginia Gazette* for two months and at the meeting-house near the town of Hopewell, in the parish of Kentucky and county of Bourbon.

Ann and Catherine Vass

Given the general difficulty of documenting females in the genealogical record, little is known about Ann and Catherine Vass, daughters of John Vass Sr. There is evidence that Ann married Peter

Brooke of Essex County. Charles Warner, in his 1971 book on the Hoskins family of Virginia has the following information:⁵⁵

Col. John Hoskins was married by 1782 to Elizabeth Chaney of Essex County, b. April 11, 1760—d. November 1825. She was a daughter of John Chaney who married ANNA BROOKE in 1758. ANNA BROOKE was a daughter of PETER BROOKE and ANNA VASS. ANNA VASS was the daughter of John Vass, son of Vincent Vass who married in 1688 Anna, daughter of John Sharp. This John Sharp owned the land which later became known as "South Hill" and the Glebe tract. The Vass family inherited this land in lower Essex. They gave the land for building the church in South Farnham Parish. Members of the Vass family were vestrymen and clerks of the parish.

The records of Essex contain the will of a Peter Brooke—but probably not the one who married Ann Vass. Written 10 Apr 1710 and proved 25 Feb 1709/10, his will mentions wife Anne Brooke, son-in-law Samuel Stephens, and brother, Thomas Brooke. It was witnessed by John Ball, Thomas Brooke, Thomas Beeson, and Richard Bradburys. On 10 Apr 1710, the widow Ann Brooke secured a bond on the probate of her husband's estate. Security on the bond was given by Vincent Vass (spelled Vauss in this same record) and Lewis Latane. Also, as noted earlier, the Essex order books record that, at a court held 22 May 1717, the suit between “Anne ye Wife of Vincent Vass plaintiff and Ann Bradbury, defendant,” was dismissed by petition.

John's daughter, Catherine Vass, married William Jones who left a Middlesex County will dated April 1747 and proved in April 1748. This will named sons Rice Jones (eldest son and heir), Thomas Jones, and Susannah Jones. He made his brothers Rice and John executors, both of whom died without issue. This William Jones who married Catherine Vass was the son of John Jones whose wife was Elizabeth, given name unknown. This Elizabeth left a will in Essex dated 9 Nov 1742, and proved 15 Apr 1746. Described as of South Farnham Parish, she named daughter Elizabeth Jones, sons John Jones, William Jones, and Rice Jones, and granddaughter Elizabeth Webb.

John Jones who married Elizabeth was the son of Rice Jones who married Jane Cocke, and he had brothers Rice and Nicholas Jones. The wife called “Jane Cocke” was the widow of Nicholas Cocke and her first husband was Bartholomew Curtis. The Rice Jones family of Essex and Middlesex Counties descends from a landed family of Oxford, England. A pedigree of this line (Jones of Asthall) can be found in William Henry Turner (ed.) *The Visitations of the County of Oxford, Taken in the Years 1566, 1674 and in 1634*. Rice Jones who married Jane Cocke was the daughter of Rice Jones and his

⁵⁵ Charles Willard Hoskins Warner, *Hoskins of Virginia and Related Families* (Tappahannock, VA: privately published by the author, 1971), p. 73.

wife, Jane Bray, daughter of Sir Gyles Bray of Barrington in Gloucestershire, England. As noted above, their children included John Jones, who had land in Essex, Rice Jones, who had land in Middlesex, and Nicholas Jones. Of these, John Jones was the eldest son and heir. Therefore, at his brother's death, he inherited his brother's land in Middlesex. This land lay along the Rappahannock River, straddling the line between Essex and Middlesex counties, and was just south of the old Vass tract called "South Hill." Both tracts had originally belonged to Rice Jones who married Jane Cocke, and was known as the "Nimcock" tract. This area is known today as "Jones Point" on the Rappahannock River.

Vincent Vass Sr. of King and Queen County

Introduction

It is well known, but very unfortunate for those interested in family history, that the early records of King and Queen County, Virginia are meager, most having been destroyed by fire prior to and during the Civil War. This makes research in the county difficult, at best. In the case of the Vass family, the loss of early records has made it impossible to develop a complete picture of the family as it existed in that county. Even so, some facts can be established, and a few of these are related in the sections below. The information that is available suggests members of the Vass family of King and Queen were educated, of the usual religious nature, civic-minded, and associated with a number of prominent King and Queen families, including the Pendleton, Brooke, Fleet, Rowe, Foster, Shepherd, Garrett, Watkins, Boyd, and Gardner families, among others. In some cases, they were connected by marriage. For example, the famed jurist, Edmund Pendleton of Virginia, in his 1792 family chronology, tells us that Philip Pendleton of King and Queen, the progenitor of the Virginia line of Pendletons, married Isabella Hurt, by whom he had issue, including a daughter, Rachel Pendleton, born about 1693, who married John Vass of Essex, son of Vincent Vass and Ann Sharpe. And, as will be discussed below, Thomas Vass of King and Queen married into the Foster and Shepherd families, and an Edward Voss (whose name also appears in numerous records as Vass) married into the well-known Robert Brooke line of Essex and King and Queen. There were doubtless many other connections by blood and marriage, but the evidence to establish the particulars is wanting in many cases.

It is also certain that the Vass line of King and Queen was closely related to members of the Essex line, but the precise nature of the connections remains unverified by detailed documentation. And, although the land tax books show that the Vass family continued to own land in King and Queen until

1800, it seems that most members of the family had died or departed the county by the late 1780s, retaining only a title to land there.

The first instance the writer has found to date of the name Vass name in connection with King and Queen County occurs in a deed of lease and release in the records of Essex County, Virginia. In this deed, dated 18/19 Mar 1750/51, John Vass, planter of South Farnham Parish, Essex County, and his wife Rachel (nee Pendleton), convey 240 acres in South Farnham, Essex County, to Vincent Vass, planter of Stratton Major Parish King and Queen, for £155. In the following discussion, this Vincent Vass will be referred to as Vincent Vass Sr. hereafter in an effort to avoid confusion in discussing him and his probable wives and children. The deed was witnessed by James Edmonson and James Farguson. The grantor in the deed, John Vass, was the son of the earlier Vincent Vass, who died in Essex in 1727. So, who is this Vincent Vass Sr. of King and Queen? Despite evidence presented earlier concerning the children of John Vass, as named in his will, it seems that he is also one of John's son, but evidence to actually verify this is lacking, and so the conjecture is based on circumstantial evidence only.

In any event, this Vincent Vass Sr., planter of Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen, is probably the same man who appears in the vestry book of that parish about this time. For example, on 22 Jul 1751, the vestry of the upper church of Stratton Major Parish ordered that Robert Garrett, John Leigh, and Vincent Vass procession land between Tarsatyan and Great Heartquake swamps. Figure 13 shows a number of consecutive processioning records taken from the Stratton Major Parish vestry book, including the one mentioning Vincent Vass Sr.⁵⁶

Date	Precinct	Processioner 1	Processioner 2	Processioner 3
10 May 1731	Tarsatyan and Little Heartquake Swamps	Robert Garrett	John Ware	Thomas Bourn
ditto	Little and Great Heartquake Swamps	Mr. Valentine Ware	Humphrey Garrett	John Smith
13 Nov 1735	Tarsatyan and Little Heartquake Swamps	Thomas Soward	John Ware	Thomas Bourn
ditto	Little and Great Heartquake Swamps	William McCarty	Humphrey Garrett	Thomas Burk (? Burch)
25 Jul 1739	Tarsatyan and Little Heartquake Swamps	Thomas Soward	Mr. Thomas Thorp	Thomas Bourn
ditto	Little and Great Heartquake Swamps	William McCarty	Richard Garrett	Thomas Burch
3 Aug 1743	Tarsatyan and Little Heartquake Swamps	Thomas Soward	Robert Garrett	Thomas Bourn
ditto	Little and Great Heartquake Swamps	Edward Dugliss	Thomas Garrett	Thomas Burk (? Burch)
17 Aug 1747	Tarsatyan and Great Heartquake Swamps	Thomas Soward	Robert Garrett	Thomas Bourn
22 Jul 1751	ditto	John Leigh	Robert Garrett	Vincent Vass
10 Jul 1755	ditto	John Leigh	Robert Garrett	Richard Garrett
27 Jul 1759	ditto	James Boyd	Robert Garrett	Richard Garrett

⁵⁶ C. G. Chamberlayne (transcriber and editor) *The Vestry Book of Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen County, Virginia, 1729-1783*. Reprint edition, Virginia State Library and Archives, Richmond, Virginia, 1989.

8 Nov 1763	ditto	John Nichols	Christopher Ware	Richard Garrett
3 Dec 1767	ditto	Humphrey Garrett Jr.	Christopher Ware	Richard Garrett
1 Oct 1771	ditto	Richard Walden	Christopher Ware	Richard Garrett
7 Jul 1775	ditto	Richard Bray	Christopher Ware	Richard Garrett
28 Sep 1779	ditto	Richard Bray	Christopher Ware	Thomas Burk
25 Oct 1783	ditto	Francis Gaines	Thomas Collins	Thomas Burk

Figure 13: Processioning records from vestry book of Stratton Major Parish

Incidentally, the old colonial “upper” church of this parish still stands today, along side Rt. 14 in the southern part of the county. Evidence conclusively shows that there was an upper church in existence in 1729, and that it was in constant and regular use until 1768, when an order appears for its abandonment as a place of worship by the parish.



Figure 14: Upper Church, Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen County, Virginia

For those not familiar with the concept, land processioning in colonial Virginia was a process to overcome inaccuracies in early land surveys in the colony. In 1682, the Assembly passed an act declaring boundaries of lands held within the colony should be determined by land processioning, i.e., the viewing of the inhabitants. This was linked to the tax-tithing revenue system. In this process, once every four years, on order of the county court, the vestrymen of the established church in the parish were to divide the parish into precincts, and the freeholders of adjoining lands were to examine and renew boundary markers. This custom, which carried over from England, was continued throughout the eighteenth century, although not always uniformly followed or enforced.

Given that processioners were generally chosen from substantial men that lived in the area they were to procession, it seems likely that Vincent Vass Sr. resided in the area between the Tarsatyan and Great Heartquake swamps, and in the general vicinity where Robert Garrett and John Leigh resided.

These clues provide some idea of the neighborhood where he lived,, and are discussed more fully in the paragraphs below.

According to the two volumes by Malcolm Hart Harris called *Old New Kent County: Some Account of The Planters, Plantations, and Places in New Kent County*, John Leigh, mentioned above, was the son of Col. William Leigh of King and Queen, who received a patent in August 1642 to 1,000 acres of land on the north side of the Charles (later, York) River, and Poropotanke Creek. Leigh obtained many other tracts including one of 400 acres which he patented on 4 Nov 1683. From the Virginia land patent books, it appears that the Leigh plantation was on the Mattapony River, about a mile below the courthouse landing, and below the mouth of Apostique Creek. Figure 15 is a section taken from the 1751 Fry-Jefferson map of Virginia. Just below the courthouse is a creek called “Pastcook” which is in all probability Apostique Creek. Heartquake Creek is shown as “Hartquip.” According to Malcolm Harris, in the early days, streams were designated “creeks,” within the tidal area, and “swamps” above the tidal area.



Figure 15: Section of 1751 Fry-Jefferson Map of Virginia

Leigh became a very influential man, both in the county, and in the General Assembly. He and his wife had at least two sons, William and John, who inherited his estate when he died in 1703. His son John Leigh was named in the Commission of Peace in 1729. On 11 Apr 1732, Major John Leigh was

granted 167 acres of land. From the description in the patent, this land lay between his own land and the lands of Chichley Corbin Thacker's plantation, the lands of John Burch, and "Plunkett's land" on the east side of the Rowling (rolling) Road. As will be discussed later on, the plantation that belonged to Thacker became known, in later years, as "Melrose," and was connected to an Edward Voss or Vass (the name appears in both variants in the records).

John Burch is also mentioned in a patent of 11 Apr 1732 in King and Queen, which is described as 167 "acres lying between the lands of said Birches, Major John Leighs, Mr. Chickley (sic) Corbin Thacker, John Birches and Plunkets." This Burch family was established in King and Queen as early as 20 Oct 1665, when a William Burch received a patent for 345 acres of land on the north side of the Mattapony River, about two miles in the woods upon the western branch of Harkquack (Heartquake) Swamp, "back from Peter Ford." The 1704 Quit Rent roll for King and Queen lists both a John and a William Burch, and a Richard Burch, born in King and Queen in 1732, is the subject of a book by Gail Shepard Tomlinson called *The descendants of Richard & Janey Burch of King and Queen County, Virginia & Person County, North Carolina: a collaborated genealogy*. As will be seen later, Thomas Vass of King and Queen married Sarah Shepherd, daughter of Samuel Shepherd. Sarah's sister, Mildred Shepherd, married a Mr. Burch, likely a member of this same line.

Although the Garrett family was prominent in early King and Queen, little information about them can be found. Humphrey Garrett appears in the first vestry records of Stratton Major Parish still extant. They are dated 8 Apr 1729. He and Robert Garrett appear as processioners in the vestry records of 10 May 1731. The records of Stratton Major Parish also contain a list of families to whom pews were allotted in the new church completed in the 1760s—the one still standing. The list notes that Humphrey, Robert, and Richard Garrett were allotted space in pew #4 on the south side of the church. Other Garrett given names that appear in the vestry records include Elizabeth, Esther, Rachel, and Thomas. The name Humphrey Garrett also appears in the records of Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County. They show that Thomas Garrett, son of Humphrey and Amy, was born on 10 Jan and baptized 26 Jan 1745/46. The same record also shows the birth of John and James Garrett, sons of Humphrey and Amy, both born 23 Aug 17xx (date obscured). The relation of this Humphrey to the members of the King and Queen line is unknown, but it seems there must be some connection. Some members of this Garrett line later in Lunenburg County, Virginia. Landon Bell, in his, *Lunenburg County, Virginia Wills 1746-1825*, records several references to this family. They include the will of a Robert Garrett (dated 5 May 1777, proved 10 Apr 1788) which mentions daughters Margaret Parker, Anne Wyatt,

Sarah Singleton, and brothers, Humphrey and James. Executors were Humphrey Garrett and Richard Wyatt, and witnesses were Robert Singleton, James Garrett, and John Wyatt. Also included is the will of Humphrey Garrett (dated 27 Jul 1795, proved 14 Apr 1803). It mentions wife Hannah, sons William, Richard, John, Mason, and Humphrey as well as daughters Martha Rudder, Mary Garrett, Jane Moore, and Elizabeth Peace. Executors were Hannah Garrett, Ambrose Grisham, and Overstreet Wyatt. Witnesses were Ambrose Gresham, Overstreet Wyatt, and Cary Harrison. Finally, the will of Richard Garrett (dated 21 Feb 21, 1804, proved 13 Sep 1804) mentions brothers John, Humphrey, and Mason, and sisters, Jane Moore, Patsey Rudder, Elizabeth Peace, and Polly Garrett. Executors were Thrower Freeman and Overstreet Wyatt, and witnesses were Ambrose Gresham, David Harrison, and John Barnes.

As to Heartquake Creek, it enters the Mattaponi River about a quarter of a mile above "Clifton" plantation and is made up of two branches: Little Heartquake Creek and Great Heartquake Creek, which arises in the section lying above the King and Queen Road (State Rt. 14, today). Little Heartquake crosses the road at the foot of the hill beyond the house called "Little Plymouth," and the Great Heartquake about a mile further up. There is a mill site on Great Heartquake just above the road. The mill there was erected by Camm Garlick and Henry Fleet, who were brothers-in-law. The mill later came into to the possession of the Tunstall family.

Tarsatyan Creek also appears in the records as Tastine, Tassiatiams, Arsatians, and in other variants. The Stratton Major Parish vestry book also gives it various spellings, which in each case applies to the swamp of that name. Today, Tarsatyan Creek is known as Corbin's Mill Creek. At its head stands another old mill, which was operated by a Capt. John Lane, and later by the Corbin family.

Just below Tarsatyan Creek is Burnt Mill Creek, originally called Arracaico Creek. At this site in the Colonial period stood a mill, called Foster's Mill, owned by Thomas Foster. Harris has this to say about it: "The old road leading from Centerville to King and Queen (Courthouse) dropped down a steep hill to cross Burnt Mill Creek over the old mill dam, which held the mill pond for Foster's mill, and when the mill burned, it gave to the creek and hill, the name Burnt Mill." Harris then goes on to discuss the Foster family:

The Fosters were in this area of Stratton Major Parish as early as 1682 when Thomas Foster had a grant to 108 acres of land next to the lands of Gabriel Mitchell and Nicholas Ware. Mr. Thomas Foster was in the vestry of Stratton Major Parish in 1729, and in 1735, he was a pro-cessioner of the land lying in the precinct between Pepetico Creek and the southern branch of Arracaico Creek. In 1741, Charles Collier was elected in his place on the vestry in room of Mr. Tho-

mas Foster deceased. Two years later, in 1743, John Foster was appointed processioneer of the land in the same precinct. That same year, Thomas Foster, perhaps a brother of John, married Elizabeth Smith, daughter of Thomas Smith and Ann Gregory, in Middlesex County. John Foster was elected a vestryman in the place of Capt. Robert Dudley in 1748 and in 1756, he was appointed collector of taxes in the parish and John Robinson was named his bondsman. John Foster was left out of the vestry in 1765, he having left the parish. In 1782, Thomas Foster was charged with 214 acres of land.

This Foster family is discussed further in a later section of this paper in connection with Thomas Vass of King and Queen County, who married into the family.

As noted, Heartquake Creek flows into the Mattaponi River just above “Clifton” plantation, and Harris says the plantation house stood on the banks of the river. It was purchased by the well-known John Robinson, known as “Speaker Robinson,” of the adjacent “Pleasant Hill” plantation in King and Queen. The site of his home is shown on the Fry-Jefferson map. He was thusly known because he was then the very powerful speaker of the Virginia House of Burgesses. Robinson built “Clifton” before the Revolution. In a notice of its sale, it was described as follows: “On the river just above the last mentioned plantation (“Pleasant Hill”) is another plantation, pleasantly situated, where Turner’s warehouses are, and has on it a good dwelling house, with two rooms on a floor, and several outhouses in tentable (tenantable) repair.” Col. William Boyd purchased “Clifton” about 1805. He had married Mary Robinson, daughter of the Speaker, and Susanna Chiswell, his third wife. The Boyds resided there until 1816, when the original house burned. Col. Boyd then rebuilt the house on the same walls. Mrs. Boyd died in 1821, and was the last of the children of Speaker Robinson. A more detailed account of this Boyd family will be presented later.

Returning now to Vincent Vass Sr. of King and Queen, the Stratton Major vestry records show that on 30 Sep 1751, he was paid 400 pounds of tobacco as the current reader of the upper church of the parish. Again, on 17 Nov 1752, Vass was paid an additional 120 pounds of tobacco for his services as reader of the upper church of Stratton Major Parish. The following year, on 7 Jul 1753, the Essex County land records disclose another transaction involving Vincent Vass Sr., this one a deed of mortgage between himself (called Vincent Vass of Stratton Major Parish King and Queen County, planter), of one part and John Vass of South Farnham Parish, Essex. The deed recites that “in consideration of the sum of £120 current money of Virginia to him in hand paid by John Vass, Vincent Sr. bargains and sells unto John Vass all that plantation tract of land in South Farnham Parish, County of Essex, adjacent to and bounded by the lands of Capt. William Beale, Mr. Richard Adams, and Mr. John Boughton, containing 250 acres more or less, together with all houses profits and hereditaments to said plantation belonging.” Also conveyed were five Negro slaves—James, Lett, Bess, Dick, and Ben— as well

as all stock on the plantation. Under the terms of this mortgage, the transaction was to become null and void if Vincent Vass Sr. “shall pay or cause to be paid unto John Vass by the 7th day of August next ensuing the date hereof the sum of £120 current money with interest on same to be computed from the date hereof at the rate of 5% per annum.” The mortgage deed was witnessed by John Vass Jr. and Henry Vass, both sons of John Vass who died in 1755. It is perhaps only coincidence, but it is interesting to note that the name “Bess” is also the name of a slave left to a Vincent Vass in the 1726 will of his grandfather, Vincent Vass.

Vincent Vass Sr. was still living in King and Queen on 5 Oct 1753, when the vestry of the upper church of Stratton Major Parish paid him 716 pounds of tobacco for his services as reader. However, the record indicates he was unable to perform his duties as reader for several months during 1753, and the vestry paid Griffith Elrington in his stead. The record reads: “To Griffith Elrington for Officiating as Clk in the absence of Vincent Vass from the 15th of April till the 9th Day of 7ber 22 Sundays.” It should be added that the abbreviation, “Clk,” stands for the term, “clerk,” which is another term for reader as used in this context. In addition, the date “9th Day of 7ber” translates to 7 Sep 1753, because, under the old Julian calendar, the first month was March, and the seventh month was September. The following year, Vass was paid 1,200 pounds by the vestry on 7 Oct 1754, for services as reader. However, at a vestry meeting held 26 Sep 1755, he was described as “later reader” of the upper church, when was paid a final payment 850 pounds for 8 ½ months service as the rate was 100 pounds of tobacco for each month’s service as reader. This suggests Vass probably ceased his duties as reader some time around June or July 1755.

While the term “later reader” might be construed to mean that Vass died about this time, it appears, instead, that he simply left King and Queen at this time. This view is supported by an Essex deed of 17 Feb 1759 in which Vincent Vass Sr., and Winnafred his wife, both referred to in the deed as of Essex County, sold 240 acres of land in South Farnham Parish, Essex County, to Henry Vass. Witnesses were William Brooke Jr., John Brooke, and John Cheney. Significantly, this is the same 240 acre tract which John Vass of Essex conveyed to Vincent Vass Sr. of King and Queen on 18/19 Mar 1750/51. Moreover, a history of Meador family called, *Our Meador Families in Colonial America—As found in the records of Isle of Wight, Lancaster, (Old) Rappahannock, Richmond, Essex and Caroline Counties, Virginia*, by Victor Paul Meador and Bernal M. Meador, states that Winnafred Gatewood, daughter of John Gatewood, married Vincent Vass Sr. some time before 1761. So, it seems the Vincent Vass who was living in Stratton Major Parish of King and Queen County in the 1750s left the county about June or July 1755, and moved to Essex, perhaps about the time he married Winnafred Gatewood. Incidentally, this same 240 acre tract was subsequently sold in 1787 by Henry Vass and his

wife, Catherine, who were then living in Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County, to John Beale of Essex.

Known Children of Vincent Vass, Sr.

The man described above as Vincent Vass Sr. of King and Queen seems to have had nine wives, but the names of all of them are not known. It is also evident from the records that Vincent Vass Sr. was a great scoundrel and, apparently, a murder to boot. He married wife after wife, most of them from very prominent families, and after quickly exhausting their estates and those of the children, moved on to marry again. The records are replete with examples illustrating his various financial difficulties, insolvencies, and other troubles. At the North Carolina State Archives, there is an item that makes reference to Vincent Sr. in this regard.⁵⁷ It is dated 27 Oct 1800 and makes special reference to Vincent Vass of Spotsylvania County who owed £23.15.8 to Scottish merchant, Robert Jardine. In describing Vass, the document has this to say about him:

Vincent Vass has experienced a greater variety of fortune than any other man in Virginia. From some short time before this debt was contracted 'till his death, he had married 9 wives. No sooner was he ever marr'd (married) than he spent his wife's (estate) & become insolvent. He died lately in the Penitentiary House in this State to which Place he was sentenced to sevl yrs confinmt (several years confinement) for killing his ninth & last wife. He resided in the Coty (County) of Spotsa (Spotsylvania) 'till about the year 1789 then for some yrs in the Coty (County) of Caroline & lastly in the Coty of Halifax in this State. He has been solvent & insolvent so often that I find it impossible to fix any particular dates to his various lives.”

According to an advertisement in the *Virginia Gazette* of 21 Jan 1775, Jardine had come into the colony to take over the management of a store in Fredericksburg, Virginia “formerly kept by Mr. George Mitchell. However, it appears he left Virginia after about a year according to another advertisement in the same paper, this one dated, Fredericksburg, 1 Feb 1776:

I intend to London in a very short Time, and have appointed Mr. James Somerville, Merchant of this Place, my lawful Attorney, properly authorized to receive and discharge all Debts due me; and I beg that those who are indebted to my Store will pay the same, with all convenient Speed, to the said Mr. Somerville; and all those who are indebted by Notes, or open Accounts, are requested to come and pay, or reduce them into Bond till it is more convenient to discharge them.

⁵⁷ British records collection in the Treasury Series T 79/94 (Reports of William Hening, Special Agent of the United States relative to British Debts). See *North Carolina Genealogical Society Journal*, vol. iv, p. 220 (1978).

Take Notice, I am the Principal by whom the late George Mitchell was Factor many Years.
Signed Robert Jardine.

Sarah Vass

The first wife of Vincent Vass Sr. for whom we have a record is Ann Rust of Richmond County, Virginia; however, she was probably not his first wife. Richmond is on the north side of the Rappahannock River, just across from Essex County. The Rusts were an old and distinguished family in eighteenth century Virginia. Their plantation, called "Islington," was located on the river just below the well known "Sabine Hall," that belonged to Landon Carter, the son of Robert, called "King," Carter of "Corotoman" plantation in Lancaster County, Virginia. According to Charles Warner, the progenitor of the Rust family was William Rust (ca. 1634-1699) who married Ann Metcalf. Their son was Benjamin Rust (ca. 1700-1754), who married Elinor Green as his first wife, and then Sarah Metcalfe.⁵⁸ Sarah was the daughter of Richard Metcalfe and his wife, Anne Stone, the daughter of Col. John Stone.

Benjamin Rust, by his second wife, Sarah Metcalfe, had the following known issue: Hannah Rust; Richard Rust; John Rust; Ann Rust, born 4 Oct 1727; Metcalfe Rust; and Sarah Rust, born 22 Sep 1731. The dates of birth for Ann and Sarah Rust are taken from the still extant register of North Farnham Parish in Richmond County.⁵⁹ Following is a short discussion of the various children of Benjamin Rust:

(1) Hannah Rust married 10 Jun 1755 (bond) to Samuel Rust, her cousin, and eldest son of Captain Peter Rust, by whom she had two children: Benjamin Rust and Peter Rust. Following the death of Samuel Rust in 1769, Hannah married, secondly, 6 Nov 1769 (marriage settlement) John Corrie, Gent.

(2) Richard Rust, living 1746, died without issue before his father, Benjamin.

(3) Son John Rust, born 2 Nov 1725, died unmarried.

(4) Ann Rust, born 4 Oct 1727, named in the will of her uncle, John Metcalfe, married Vincent Vass Sr. by whom she had a daughter, Sarah Vass, who married Baker Degraffenreid, son of Tscharner Degraffenreid by his first wife, Mary Baker.⁶⁰ Following the death of his wife, Mary, Tscharner married Sarah (Rust) Lowry, widow of John Lowry.

⁵⁸ A genealogy of this Metcalfe family can be found in *Genealogies of Virginia Families*, vol. iii.

⁵⁹ *North Farnham (Va.) Register, and Richmond County, Virginia, Miscellaneous Records, 1699-1724*.

⁶⁰ For those interested in this family, additional detail can be found in the book by Katherine Reynolds called *Descendants of Baker and Sarah Vass de Graffenreid of Virginia and North Carolina*.

(5) Sarah Rust, born 12 Sep 1729, married first, John Lowry of Essex County and second, Tscharner Degraffenreid.

(6) Metcalfe Rust, born 12 Sep 1729, died unmarried before his father, Benjamin.

Sarah Vass, daughter of Vincent and Ann (Rust) Vass is named in the will of her grandfather, Benjamin Rust which was written 19 Feb 1754 and proved 1 Apr 1754:⁶¹

Item: I give to my Grand Daughter Sarah Vass all that Tract of land on Totuskey (creek) together with the Stock of Cattle hoggs and Sheep and the following Slaves to wit, Mary ann and her daughter Pat. Her sister Roney Jarey & little Adam to her and her heirs forever.

Item: (It is) my Will and desire that my Daughter Hannah Rust to have the Care of my Grand Daughter Sarah Vass's Estate till she arrives to the age of Eighteen or marriage. I likewise Give to my Grand Daughter Sarah Vass my two Beds that I reserved to be paid to her at the same time or at least twelve pistoles value, and if in case She should died before She comes to that age or without Issue, I leave the whole to my Daughter Sarah Lowrey and her heirs forever.

In his will, Benjamin Rust named his daughter, Hannah Rust, his brother, (Capt.) Peter Rust, and his "kinsman," Samuel Rust (probably Hannah's husband), the son of Peter Rust, as "my hole (whole) & Sole" executors. Since it appears that Sarah Vass was not yet eighteen when Rust wrote his will in 1754, it seems she was born some time after 1736. Since his daughter Ann is not mentioned, and since her sister Hanna was given the care of Sarah's estate, Ann (Rust) Vass was almost certainly deceased by 19 Feb 1754.

Of the executors of the will of Benjamin Rust, Samuel Rust died some time between 21 Apr 1766, when he drew his will, and 3 Apr 1769, when the will was proved. Hannah married John Corrie on 6 Nov 1769, not long after he husband's death. She wrote her will 3 Apr 1790, and it was proved 4 Jul 1791. Capt. Peter Rust, the other executor, wrote his will 9 Nov 1761, and it was proved 26 Jan 1762. These dates are of interest in the context of a later chancery suit in Virginia in which Sarah (Vass) Degraffenreid and Vincent Degraffenreid, her eldest son and heir at law of Baker Degraffenreid, were plaintiffs. The defendants were Peter Rust (executor of Hannah Rust, the surviving executrix of Benjamin Rust), Anthony Gardner (who was the administrator of the estate of Spencer Boyd of King and Queen County), William M. Hawkins, Spencer Boyd (son of Spencer Boyd, deceased), Robert Boyd, John Didlake, Betty Boyd (widow of James Boyd, deceased), Vincent Vass, and William Boyd (an infant represented by William M. Hawkins, his guardian). More will be said about this case later on.

⁶¹ Ellsworth Marshall Rust, *Rust of Virginia: Genealogical and Biographical Sketches of the Descendants of William Rust, 1754-1940* (Washington, D.C.: privately published, 1940), p. 51.

The previously mentioned Landon Carter, who was a near neighbor of Benjamin Rust, kept a personal diary and in it there is an entry dated 25 Jul 1770 that reads as follows:⁶²

This day we went to divide the land called Juggs, formerly a purchase made out of my mouth by the roguish old Ben Rust, but in such a manner made as to vest the fee simple in his son Richard Rust to defraud his wife out of any dower in it, should she outlive him; Richard Rust dying an infant, the Estate fell to his 3 sisters: Mrs. Vass, Mrs. Lowry and the present Mrs. Corrie. (Samuel Rust was the first husband, and De graffenreidt married the heiress of Mrs. Vass. Sam Rust had a son Ben.)

Vincent Vass is mentioned in the records of Richmond County, Virginia as early as 13 Jan 1743, when he appeared in court there to answer a complaint by Daniel Hornby that he had stolen various articles of clothing belonging to Hornby. The court order notes that Vass was acquitted in the case. Not long after, another order of Richmond County court, this one issued in Oct 1743, records that Vass again answered a complaint by Daniel Hornby on suspicion of stealing a pistol and several other items, and this case too was dismissed by the court. The following year, there is a 27 Mar 1744 deed book entry in Richmond County that records a conveyance from Willoughby Newton of Cople Parish in Westmoreland County, to Benjamin Rust of Richmond, County. The deed was witnessed by Vincent Vass, Samuel Rust, and Micajah Simmons. On 4 Jun 1744, there is another Richmond County deed witnessed by Vincent Vass, as well as by Samuel Rust, Micajah Simons, Willoughby Newton, and John Simmons. Then, there is another Richmond court order of Dec 1745 that mentions Vincent Vass as a member of a jury there. All of this would seem to suggest this Vincent Vass was resident in Richmond County in the early to mid-1740s. However, as has been seen, he was in King and Queen County by the early 1750s, so he must have left Richmond County some time between 1746 and 1751.

While Vincent Vass Sr. was in King and Queen County in the early 1750s, it seems he moved back to Richmond County, where he married Judith Ball. The marriage bond, dated 27 Nov 1755, was given by Samuel Rust. Not long after, in an order of the Richmond County court, Vass was appointed guardian to Sarah Vass “giving security whereupon the said Vass together with John Lowry (Lowrey) and Daniel Lawson, his securities, acknowledged bond for the guardianship of Sarah Vass.” His wife, Judith, is mentioned in a 31 May 1756 Richmond County account book record of the division of the estate of Captain George Ball, deceased, that mentions Judith Ball, John Ball, William Ball, Sarah Ball, Hannah Ball, and Williamson Ball. The account was made pursuant to an order of court dated 23

⁶² Jack P. Greene, *The Diary of Colonel Landon Carter of Sabine Hall, 1752-1778* (Charlottesville: Published for the Virginia Historical Society (by) the University Press of Virginia, 1965).

May 1756. The order notes that “we have met and settled the account of George Ball dec'd . . . and by consent of Messrs. Mitchell & Glascock, guardians to the children, and Vincent Vass, have allotted & delivered the above goods etc. in full satisfaction of the children’s part of the personal estate.” Also of note in regard to this Ball family connection is an action of the Caroline County, Virginia court of 12 Aug 1756, which involved a case in an action of debt according to the court record: “Vincent Vast (sic) and Judith his wife, admx. (administratrix) of Geo. Ball, against Oliver Towles.” In the order “the defendant says he cannot deny he owes £73.12 current money.” A Richmond County order of 7 May 1759 also mentions that a cause between Vincent Vass and Williamson Ball was reinstated. Whether there were any children from the marriage between Vass and Judith Ball is not known.

It seems that Judith (Ball) Vass did not survive long after her marriage either, because Vincent Sr. married yet again, this time to Jane (Price) Montague of Middlesex County, Virginia. The bond for this marriage is dated 22 Aug 1757. Jane was the widow of William Montague, who died in 1754. The Middlesex records show that Vincent Sr. was named guardian to Jane Montague, “orphan of William Montague.” In the same proceeding, Thomas Price was named guardian to William’s orphans, Catherine and Margaret Montague, while another William Montague was named guardian to William’s orphans, James, Samuel, and Peter Montague. Unfortunately, Jane (Price) (Montague) Vass seems to have suffered the fate of Vincent Sr.’s previous wives since she expired some time before 17 Feb 1759, when Vincent Sr. and his wife Winnifred (Gatewood) Vass of Essex County, conveyed 250 acres of land in South Farnham Parish there to Henry Vass, as previously noted. Again, this was the same tract in South Farnham Parish that Vincent Sr. had bought from John Vass and his wife, Rachel, in March 1750/51.

Vincent Vass Sr. is also very probably the same man of that name mentioned in a deed that was confirmed at a court held in Essex County on 17 Apr 1764. This deed involved a bargain and sale deed by Vass to James Emerson of the town of Tappahannock. The transaction involved six slaves—Bob, Jacob, Patty, Rachel, Toney, and one other whose name is difficult to read in the record on file. The consideration was £200 pounds. The transaction, witnessed by James Webb, was part of a larger one that involved a suit by William Snodgrass, merchant, against Vass. It also involved a bond given on account by James Emerson and a Mr. Stevens payable to Messrs. Upshaw and Roane. Interestingly, these same slaves are mentioned in another indenture of 21 Jun 1764 between Vincent Vass and William Lyne of the first part, both described as of King and Queen, and Archibald Ritchie of Essex, of the second part. This agreement records that Vass, in consideration of £120.10, sells to Lyne and Ritchie a tract of 245 acres in King and Queen (which Vass bought at public sale from the estate of Nicholas Pamplin), together with nine slaves—Patt, Jacob, Bob, Toney, Rachell, Jeny, James, Lett, and

Anthony—along with four feather beds and all household furniture, stocks of cattle, hogs, etc., on condition that if Vass “pays £120.10 at or upon 1 December next ensuing . . . the agreement is void.” The wording seems to indicate this was a mortgage deed executed by Vass and secured by the named property. Research indicates that Nicholas Pamplin was married to Mary, last name unknown, by whom he had a son Robert Pamplin. Mary later married a Mr. Jenkins. There is also evidence to suggest this Nicholas Pamplin was the son of an earlier Nicholas Pamplin who died King and Queen in 1751, and who was the husband of Sarah Roane. Sarah Roane had a brother, Col. William Roane, who was the father of Judge Spencer Roane. Judge Spencer Roane married Elizabeth Hoskins, daughter of Col. John Hoskins. And, as has already been noted, the wife of Col. John Hoskins was Elizabeth Chaney, who descends from John Vass (d. 1755). The Essex guardian bonds mention that Elizabeth Chaney, orphan of John Chaney deceased, was bound to Henry Vass as her guardian.

From the foregoing, it seems that some time between 17 Feb 1759 and 21 Jun 1764, Vincent Vass Sr. moved from Essex back to King and Queen County. How long he remained there is not known. However, the records indicate that he was living in Spotsylvania County, Virginia by about 1770. Then, in 1780, comes the next information regarding another marriage for Vass. In this instance, he married a wealthy Spotsylvania widow named Elizabeth Manning. This marriage took place in Orange County, Virginia, and the marriage bond is dated 29 Aug 1783.

In all, we can account for five of the supposed nine marriages for Vincent Vass Sr.: Ann Rust, Judith Ball, Jane (Price) Montague, Winnifred Gatewood, and Elizabeth Manning. There must have been four other marriages, but nothing about them has been discovered. One of his probable children, Thomas Vass, was born in King and Queen in 1738. If Vincent Sr. was at least twenty-one years of age when Thomas was born, then that would place his date of birth as 1717 or before. In the following sections, additional information is given on the known children of Vincent Vass Sr.

Vincent Vass Jr.

Vincent Vass Jr. was a veteran of the Revolutionary War, and served in the Virginia Continental line. There is a pension file for him that describes his service during the war in some detail.⁶³ Among other things, it contains his affidavit in which he states that he had a brother of the full-blood (i.e., same mother and father), as well as a half-brother, Philip Vass (same father but different mother). As

⁶³ See Revolutionary War pension file W6337/BLWT15157-160-55.

will be seen, the brother of the full-blood was named Richard. The affidavit sworn by Vass reads, in part, as follows:

State of Tennessee

Tipton County, western district of Tennessee,

On this day, it being 3rd day of April, 1837 Vincent Vass personally appeared in open court now sitting, the said Vass being a resident of Tipton County in the State of Tennessee & aged 83 years 2nd day of June next according to the register of same, who being sworn according to law doath upon his oath make the following declaration to obtain the benefit of the act of Congress passed 7 June, 1832.

I was born the 2nd of June in the year of our Lord A.D. 1755 in the county of Essex, State of Virginia, but my father moved to Spotsylvania county and said State, where I received my education, a widow woman who lived near me, who had a son by the name of Samuel Arnold, he & I got religion and was baptised by the Rev. John Waller of Said county & State.

Virginia raised two State regiments, the 1st & 2nd. Peter Stubblefield Lieutenant in Capt. John Kemp's company in the 1st Regt. Commanded by Col. George Gibson. S. Arnold & myself enlisted with him for 3 years, not to be carried out of the State; our wages was \$5 per month &c. The regiment was being made up as we marched down to Williamsburg & little York. We had not long been there before we had orders to march to the North to join Gen. Washington in the Continental army. The regiments refused to go, but after some confusion we were called up again and orders red,—them that was willing to go was to have furlow to go by home, their wages to be raised from \$5 to 8, and a bounty of land—to meet at Alexandria on such a day to receive the small Pox &c. On them conditions we agreed, my officers resigned & I did not go—we marched off & joined General Washington's army at the Valley forge, & put in General Mulenburg's Brigade—the British then in Philadelphia, then I turned out on a command with General Demarqus de lafayette, & had all like to have been taken &c.—the enemy then evacuated Philadelphia and General Washington persued after General Lee overtook them at Monmouth & had a little battle—General Washington with his army far behind marching as fast as he could to overtake them, but General Lee ordered a retreat when the enemy was retreating. If the division under Lee had made a firm stand it is supposed we should have gained a complete victory—many died owing to the intense heat & fatigue. I believe this was in the year 1778. We marched then towards the Hudson &c.—General Washington told Wayne to take as many men out of the Army as he wanted and go attack Stony Point. We were drawed up—Major Stewart rode up and down the lines & said he wanted none men but what was willing to face death for their country. He talked very cleavour on the occasion, them that was willing step out 3 paces in front, my messmate Samuel Arnold & my self stepped out—we were told to take nothing with us but our arms and our canteens; this was the 15th July, 1779, I think we joined General Anthony Wayne's men & marched about sun set we halted at a creek, we had white bits of paper to fasten to the crowns of our hats, no man to speak a word—the forlorn hope to be taken, the watchword given &c.—off we went over mountains, through deep morasses, rocks &c—there was no plundering, we surmounted every difficulty and in the fort we got through blazes of cannon and small arms, we had not a gun loaded. Col. Flury struck the colours with his hands—I received 2 wounds, a musket ball scaled the bone of my hip—a buck shot entered my thigh—the British cried out quarters, quarters, brave Americans &c.—my messmate Samuel Arnold was wounded in the hip, we

went up to Albany Hospital and through mercy I got well—but my poor messmate died—mortification took place,—the Doctor kept me there as an assistant &c.--& then we marched to Philadelphia and got our discharge from Col. George Gibson and made for home, and to my great (sic) when I got home, my Brother was enlisted in Capt. Bluford's regiment and gone to the South, the only Brother by Father and Mother, am told he enlisted for 3 years in the Continental line, and was to have a bounty of land, the first engagement he was in was killed, cut to pieces by the british light Horse, I hope if any thing coming I may enjoy it, his land if nothing else, -- I undertook a school after I got home from the North, but did not continue 8 months before I was drafted for 3 months to go to the South. I took my discharge along with me in hopes to get off, but it would not do, for they said one old soldier was worth half dozen militia, & off we marched—Col. George Stubblefield commanded our regiment—after a hard march we joined General Gates army at Rugely's Mills at night & drew a jill of molasses—and ordered to march again at 12 o'clock in the night—the time came & off we went the whole army—we went 5 or 6 miles and heard guns and firing—the Virginia & North Carolina militia were formed to the left, this was I suppose one hour before day—if we could have stayed so and brought on the action by degrees we should eat breakfast in Camden that morning, but as it was light we had orders to advance and not to shoot till we could see the white of their eyes, we could see them coming extending their lines as low as ours—our militia got in a confusion, six or 8 deep in some places, we made one fire and away we went to the reedy swamp we took—we were superior to them—I lost my Pocket book, my discharge and what little money I had &c—however I served my time and got my discharge, & coming home, came through Harrisburg Town in Granville county, North Carolina—my half Brother Phillip and Col. Joseph Taylor owned the place—Commissary & quartermaster's stores kept there in the Continental line. I was appointed by Col. Long who was quartermaster and commissary to the Post of Harrisburg Town and there I continued until after the War in them two Posts, which is very well known about there—and my pay got in Continental money, and never did me no good, for I have now at this time 451 dollars Congress money paid to me as my wages, which was as good as gold & silver, when I received it paid to me—so I have fought and bled for my country for nothing—am very old—If I live to see the 2nd of June next shall be 83 years old and through misfortunes & turn of Times, has reduced me very low in this world. I moved from Rockingham County, State North Carolina 1st fall to Tipton County western district of Tennessee as above mentioned where I am yet, (In) 1818 at a superior court in North Carolina I got the Hon. H.A. Sheppard to draw me up a declaration and it was sworn to in court nearly like this & I sent it to the War Office and it was rejected owing to my being in a State regiment, then I applied to the Legislature of Virginia and they gave me \$60 per year, not as much as a Continental soldier. Col. Joseph Martin wrote me word that the Legislature had made me a present of \$60 per year. He was in the Senate—I was at his house and showed him my wounds that I received at Stony Point &c. &c. —a great many more ups and downs have I had in the Army—oh, that I had served my God as faithful as I have served my country, between 5 & 6 years have I served—the money of my wages & prize money at Stone Point is \$451 it runs thus—this bill of so many dollars intitles the bearer to receive it in gold or silver, according to an act of Congress passed on such a day. I took care to save it for it did not come light to me. (Signed) Vincent Vass

As the pension file notes, Vincent Vass Jr. married Caty Chambers. They lived for some time in North Carolina, but eventually moved to Tipton County, Tennessee where he died 7 Jan 1850, at the home of Spencer T. Hurt. Caty died some two years later on 26 Aug 1852.

Richard Vass

As noted in the affidavit above, Vincent Vass Jr. stated that he had a brother of the full blood who enlisted in “Capt. Bluford’s” regiment of the Virginia Continental line for three years. At the end of the sworn statement given by Vincent Jr., there is this further statement also given by him that shows that this brother was named Richard Vass:

Mr. Edward O. Chambers a Gentlemen who has been acquainted with me thirty years. I have never received one Cent from the Union, Land, nor nothing, I hope the Honorable Congress, fair freedom's Chosen Sons, will give me my Land, my back pay, and make good my wages, & the Land of my Brother Richard who got killed for his Country &c, (I) am old now but, if a foreign Enemy was in reach of me I should not be afraid to face them, if they were as big as Giants I know some men drawing money from the United States that never see no hardship in the old Revolutionary War (but) I (receive) nothing, it hurts my feelings, therefore I hope the Honorable Congress will make good to me my due, and your Petitioner in duty bound will ever pray &c &c.

So, it was his brother Richard that was killed during the Revolution while serving in “Capt. Bluford’s regiment.” According to Don Bennett, who has researched this Vincent Vass Jr. extensively, this description fits with the third Virginia Regiment commanded by Col. Abraham Buford that was sent to relieve the city of Charleston, South Carolina, which was under siege by the British. According to war records, a detachment from the regiment was defeated by British Dragoons commanded by the notorious British officer, Lt. Col. Banastre Tarleton, in what some have called the battle of the Waxhaws. The name comes from the Waxhaws District on the border between North and South Carolina—Waxhaws is about 185 miles north of Charleston, and some six miles south of the North Carolina Border.

In any case, it appears that, on 29 May 1780, Tarleton’s forces overtook Buford’s regiment of Virginia Continentals. It is said that only after sustaining heavy casualties did Buford order the surrender. The history about the subsequent events are clouded, but some claim that, after the Continentals raised the white flag, Tarleton ignored the sign of surrender because his horse had been shot from under him, and his men proceeded to mercilessly massacre Buford’s men. Some 113 Americans were killed, and another 203 were captured. Of these, 150 were so badly wounded they had to be left behind. The British refer to the affair as the Battle of Waxhaw Creek, while the Americans called it the “Buford Massacre,” “Tarleton’s Quarter,” or the “Waxhaw Massacre.”⁶⁴

⁶⁴ A detailed account of this incident can be found in the newsletter, “Southern Campaigns of the American Revolution,” available online at <http://southerncampaign.org/newsletter/v1n2.pdf>.

Beyond the fact that Richard and Vincent Vass Jr., had the same mother, nothing else is known about him except for the fact that he was killed in May 1780. Vincent Jr. said he was born in Essex County, Virginia on 2 Jun 1755. We also know that Vincent Sr. married in Richmond County, to Judith Ball on 27 Nov 1755 (date of marriage bond). So it would seem that Richard was born before Vincent, so likely in the early 1750s. Therefore, Richard must have been an older man when he joined the Revolution.

A Richard Vass is also mentioned in Crozier's book on Spotsylvania County records. The record is from Deed Book M (1788-1791), and is dated 7 Sep 1790. The abstract reads: Larkin Stanard of Spots. Co. and wife Elizabeth, to James Mitcham of same co. 65 pounds curr. 65 a. in Spots. Co., etc. Joseph Chew, Richd. Vass. It is not known who this Richard could have been. There is also a Richard Vass who supposedly served in the French and Indian War. This information comes from an entry in the order books of Caroline County, Virginia that says he served until discharged in 1758, and then served in a different regiment until discharged in 1762. It is known that Reuben Vass, son of John and Rachel (Pendleton) Vass served in the French and Indian War, and given that he too is mentioned in the same Caroline County order books, it seems more likely that the name "Richard" is an erroneous transcription of the name Reuben, especially since no other reference to this older Richard has been found.

Caty Vass

Very little is known about the daughter of Vincent Vass Sr. called Caty Vass—her formal name may have been Catherine. When or where she was born is not known. However, by 1796, she was living in Person County, North Carolina where she wrote her will on 30 Sep 1796. The will was proved at the March term of Person County court, 1797.

In her will, Caty disposes of her two Negroes, Tulip and his son Peter, which she gives to "my well beloved Brother Vincent Vass Junr to him & his heirs forever, and my clothes he may dispose of as I have Directed him." Witnesses were Nancy Cole, Sally Rogers and John Cole. Caty signed by a mark. It seems likely that Caty was probably unmarried at the time of her death and did not have any living children. It is clear, however, that she was a sister to Vincent Vass Jr., and given the closeness of their relation, it is possible she was a sister of the full blood to him and her deceased brother, Richard Vass, but this is not proved.

Philip Vass

As has been seen, Vincent Jr. mentions that he had a half-brother named Philip Vass. Given Vincent Vass Sr.'s connection with King and Queen County, Virginia, it is likely that this Philip is the same man who, as a youth, studied at the famous school or academy run by Donald Robertson in King and Queen County in the second half of the 18th century. One of the few sources of information about Robertson's school and its students is an account book Robertson kept from 1758 to 1775. In it, he records the names of those who attended his school, what he charged for books imported from abroad, laundry done under the supervision of his wife, and the instruction given in various subjects and languages, including Greek and Latin. He also records the expenditures he made for household repairs, hiring teachers and seeing to the everyday needs of his students. An entry for the year 1765, records that Philip Vass paid for Latin lessons. There is an additional mention of Philip Vass in Robertson's entries for 1769. According to the account, the 1769 tuition for Philip Vass was paid in 1771 by a Mr. S. Boyd who was almost certainly Spencer Boyd of King and Queen County who will be discussed later.

The name Philip Vass also appears in the Middlesex County records when he was an executor to the 1 Oct 1763 will of William Montague of that county. Montague's will was witnessed by Henry Vass, John Blatt, and John Owen. If Philip was old enough to serve as an executor in 1763, he must have been at least twenty-one years of age at that time. If so, this would place his date of birth as 1742, or earlier.

It seems that Philip Vass was probably residing in Essex County when he placed the following item in the *Virginia Gazette* on 23 Aug 1776:

PISCATAWAY, Essex, 21 Aug 1776. The subscriber has for sale a schooner, a little upwards of three years old, that carries 1500 bushels, with two anchors and cables, good standing rigging and foresail. She is a handsome vessel, and a prime sailer. Any person in want of such a vessel may have her for 200 (pounds). She has been lately examined, and calked over. The person who buys her may also be supplied with some small cordage and ?sails if wanting, on reasonable terms. Signed Philip Vass.

Philip Vass married Elizabeth Webb of Essex County. She was born in Essex County on 30 Jun 1754, the daughter of James Webb and his wife, Mary Edmondson. The marriage probably took place in Essex County in the early 1770s. More will be said about this Edmonson family later in connection with a Thomas Vass.

Philip and his wife, Elizabeth, left Essex and moved to Granville County, North Carolina where they purchased land from Francis Howard—the deed is dated 9 Oct 1780. On Aug 7, 1781 Philip Vass

was appointed commissioner for Granville Co. for collecting tax of the county (Order Book i, p. 312). A Col. Joseph Taylor was named as security for Philip Vass on this appointment. At this time, Vass was residing in Harrisburg, a town in Granville on the old trading path. Recall that his half-brother, Vincent Vass Jr., made reference to visiting Philip there: “(I) came through Harrisburg Town in Granville county, North Carolina—my half Brother Phillip (sic) and Col. Joseph Taylor owned the place—Commissary & quartermaster’s stores kept there in the Continental line. I was appointed by Col. Long who was quartermaster and commissary to the Post of Harrisburg Town.”

There are numerous references to Philip Vass while he lived in Harrisburg and also references to Vincent Vass Jr., while he was there.⁶⁵ For example, Philip Vass is mentioned in a letter from Joshua Potts to General Jethro Sumner and dated, Harrisburg, 1 May 1781: “Sir: Mr. Vass this moment showed me yours to Col. Burton & himself; in which I find you have changed the rendezvous of troops, & of consequence the destination of stores. In compliance with your directions, while I was at Col. Hawkins, have sent to Hillsborough upwards of three thousand Wt. of Bacon, from Edgecombe. Have at this place at present twelve thousand Weight from Warren County, three Thousand of which will be deposited in Hillsborough, & the other nine thousand continued on the Salisbury, by order of Col. Carrington, in be-half of Col. Davie at which place the Waggon will receive farther directions to Headquarters. I should have left the three thousand lbs. Bacon at this place, but as I made a contract with the owners of two waggons to convey their loads only to Hillsborough, I still think proper to transport it there, especially as there are already stores of provision already at this place, & near it which may quickly be brought here. I shall have more here by the time you rendezvous the troops. I see you require of Mr. Vass a list of Staff Officers, &c. I hereby communicate the same in Halifax district, Col. Nicholas Long, D. Q. M. G’L at Halifax. Capt. John Medearis. A. D. Q. M. G’L in Wake County. Joshua Potts, Superintendent, Commis, of Halifax District; & A. D. Q. M. at Halifax. Edward Hil, Commis. Of Edgecombe, & A. D. Q. M. G’L at Tarborough. Thomas Hunter, ditto Martin County at the Courthouse. Josiah Crump, ditto Northampton 6 miles above Halifax Town. Matthew Rabun ditto Halifax County. Arthur Arrington Ditto Nash County. William Christmas ditto Warren County. William Hill ditto Franklin County. I am Sir, your most Obedient & humble servant.
JOSHUA POTTS, S. C. Halifax Dist.”

Not long after, Sumner wrote to Vass. His letter, dated 16 Jul 1781, informs Vass that he is "under the necessity of desiring you to Barrel me two or three Hundred weight of Bacon without fail . . . by the first wagon . . . adding that "I expect you not to fail me by any excuse whatever." This letter from

⁶⁵ Numerous references to Vass can among the colonial and state records of North Carolina, available on line at: <http://docsouth.unc.edu/csr/index.html/search> .

Sumner likely prompted the following response from Vass at Harrisburg an dated 10 Aug 1781: “Dear Sir: You will receive per the wagon that comes with Lieut. Andrews’ detachment one hundred and seventy eight & half pounds bacon, one box of soap containing sixty one pounds. I am afraid the bacon is not good as I could wish for, owing to its being packed up in the night. You’ll please give me written orders respecting not issuing of soap at this post; otherwise very little will fall to your share. I am in haste, with due respect, Your very Humbel Servt, PHILLIP VASS, Commiss.”

On 8 Sep 1781 Philip Vass wrote to Governor Burke. This letter is addressed Harrisburg, Granville County, and directed to “His Excellency Thos. Burke, Esq.” In this letter, Vass comments that “I have charge of a number of publick beeves; therefore, I beg I may be furnished with three men from the Granville Militia, whose business it must be to keep up pasture fences, &c, and drive from pasture to pasture as it may happen.” There is also a communication from Burke to Vass as contained in a letter dated 20 Apr 1782. It is addressed to the “Commr. Of Granville,” Hillsborough, Apl. 20th, 1782: “I have Seen a letter of yours to Mr. Mebane, the Commissioner of Orange. I am much Surprised at your evasions. I insist that the quantity of flesh meat ordered by me on the 6th Inst. be immediately collected, or means may very probably be found to Convince you that you are not to wait for Information of who can Spare, or only act on your own Suspicion. You may perhaps learn that it is your duty to go and Examine.”

While living in Granville, Philip Vass own land adjacent to Thomas Vass, a probable brother or half-brother, who will be discussed in some detail later on. In 1782, Philip sold 316 acres in Granville to John Webb, his brother-in-law—Webb had married Amy Booker, daughter of James Booker. There is an Essex County, Virginia will written by James Booker in 1790, and proved in 1793. In it, Booker refers to son-in-law, John Webb, and daughter Mary Shephard whose sister was probably Amy Booker.

Philip Vass purchased 610 acres on Bluewing Creek in Caswell County, North Carolina on 3 Jul 1783. The property was adjacent to the Granville line. On 17 Nov 1786, he purchased an additional 200 acres adjacent to the Virginia line and the Granville County line. On 14 Sept 1789 John Boswell and John Baird sold to Joseph Westmore 385 acres on Bluewing Creek adjacent to Philip and Thomas Vass. This places Thomas in close proximity to Philip. Thomas and Sarah Vass witnessed other deeds for Philip Vass.

In 1792 Person County, North Carolina was formed from the portion of Caswell where the Vasses lived and owned land. Philip Vass was sheriff of Person County in 1792. There are two 1793 deeds where Philip, called late sheriff of Person, sells land which he seized by court order in 1792. Then, on 11 Mar 1801, Thomas Vass of Granville sold 321 acres on Bluewing Creek with Philip Vass as a wit-

ness. Later, on 5 May 1804, Thomas Vass Sr. of Granville sold an additional 200 acres on Bluewing. Then on 5 Sep 1805, Philip Vass “of Halifax County, Virginia,” sold 306 acres in Person County adjacent to the Virginia and Granville County lines. This transaction shows that by some time in 1805, Philip Vass had moved from Person to Halifax County, Virginia, where he remained until his death.

In sum, Philip Vass had moved to Granville Co., NC by 1780. In 1783 he started purchasing land in Caswell (later Person) County, where he eventually moved. Thomas Vass first appears in Caswell County about 1786, living near Philip Vass. Sometime, probably in the 1790s, Thomas Vass moved to Granville County, North Carolina. In the early 1800s Philip Vass moved to Halifax Co., Virginia.

While living in Halifax, Philip was deposed in regard to a suit attendant to the settlement of the estate of Ewen Clements of Essex County.⁶⁶ The deposition reads as follows:

State of Virginia, Halifax County Ct

The deposition of Philip Vass taken at the said Vass’ house, on the 19th of June 1816 agreeable to notice, and in conformity to a commission to us directed from the court of the County of Essex—which deposition is to be read as evidence in a suit in chancery, now depending and undetermined, in the County court of Essex wherein Ewen Clements (administrator) of Ewen Clements dec’d is Plaintiff, and Horace Bucknor (Buckner), and William Ruffin Exors of (illegible) Ritchie dec’d William Latane (administrator) with the will annexed of Robert P. Waring dec’d and Thomas Roane Exor of Thomas Roane dec’d defendants—who after being duly sworn on the holy evangels of almighty God deposeth (illegible) that in the year 1774 he transacted business for Meriwether Smith in Essex County, that in the latter part of that year was called on by said Smith Who was a joint (administrator) of the estate of Ewin Clements dec’d with Pitman Clements, he accordingly attended, the sale and kept the account of sales: at the decedent’s place of residence in Tappahannock and at his Plantation also in Essex County at which sale Pitman Clements Purchased several valuable slaves the number, nor their prices this deponent cannot recollect and that he Purchased sundry other articles at the sale aforesaid. The amount of which this Deponent cannot remember, not having at this time access to the sale book and further the deponent saith not. Signed Philip Vass

Philip Vass died not long after giving this deposition. His will, dated 13 Dec 1816 was proved in Halifax Court on 25 Jul 1825 (will book xv, pp. 185-870) and reads as follows (includes spellings as written):

⁶⁶ The patriarch of the Clements family of Essex County was Dr. John Clements whose will was dated 12 Nov 1766 and proved 20 Jul 1767. His children included sons Ewen, Pitman, Henry Haggarc, Henry, Mace, and William, and daughters Susanna, Mary Ann, Mary, Catherine, and Susanna. Ewen Clements married Ann Lowry, daughter of John Lowry and his wife, Sarah Rust—Sarah was the sister of Ann who married Vincent Vass, Sr. After the death of Ewen Clements, his widow Ann married Robert Payne Waring of Essex County. There is a note in the order books of Caroline County, Virginia from Aug court 1767 in which Pitman Clements sued Vincent Vass Sr. to collect a debt, probably in connection with the settlement of his father’s estate. Judgment was granted the plaintiff, Clements, “for his costs in the prosecution of this Suit expended.”

In the name of God Amen. I Philip Vass of Halifax County do make this my will and testament in manner and form as followeth (viz) – it is my desire that all my debts be first paid. If any of my children should die without an heir or will, their estate hereafter devised or given, it shall return again to my estate to be divided as shall be hereafter directed. If any of the legatees shall attempt to brake this will or shall enter a suit in law against the legatees or any one of them shall forfeit his or their estate hereafter given to them. The forfeited estate returned back to my estate to be divided or as shall be hereafter directed.

I give unto my daughter, Mary Boyd, negro girl, Lydia and her increase to dispose of as she pleaseth. Also I lend unto Ann B., Rachel and her increase, which negro and increase shall not be sold for no debt or debts of Alexander Boyd or his wife, Mary Boyd in no case whatsoever. The foresaid negro Rachel & her increase is not to be removed out of the county of Halifax without the consent of a majority of the legatees consumed in either of these two cases be made (illegible words) sale or removed Rachel and her increase is forfeited and returned (illegible) into my estate to be divided (illegible words) as shall be hereafter directed.

I give unto my son, James, Amy and her child Letha and their increase to him and his heirs forever.

I give unto my daughter, Sarah (?) Vass, three negroes, Lucinda, Harrell, her daughter Amanda Melvina, with their increase to her and her heirs forever.

I give unto my daughter, Apphia Vass, three negroes, Martha, Ealle & Maria Louisa, with their increase to her and her heirs forever.

I give unto my Philip E. Vass, Mary and brother, Jacob, with her increase to him and his heirs forever.

I give unto my granddaughter, Mary Elizabeth Shapard, negro girl Rose and her increase provided my granddaughter May E. Shapard dieth under age or without a child lawfully begotton, then negro Rose and her increase to be divided between her surviving brothers and sisters and their heirs forever.

I lent unto my beloved wife, Elizabeth Vass, during her widowhood, the land whereon I know live and all the rest of my estate which I have not divided or given.

Recommending to her parental care my dear daughter Elizabeth Shepard and her children during your life and at the death of my dear wife, my land whereon I know live to be by my executor sold on a credit of four annual, equal payments (inserted: (illegible) taken on the land for the payment) thereof the one forth of the sale of this land to be put out at interest, which interest is to support my daughter Elizabeth Shapard and her children with schooling, etc. and the principal at her death to be equally divided between her children and their heirs forever.

It is also my desire that my western land be sold when the injoin wrightes (Indian rights) is (sic) extinguished and my land surveyed, it to be sold at with four equal annual payments security taken on the land for the payments thereof this land may be sold (illegible) than above mentioned if it is thought best by the legatees the (illegible) arising from the sale of the western land three fourths of the money arising from the sale of the land whereon I know live with all, the remainder of my estate not already give to be equally divided by commissioners appointed by court between my children: James P. Vass, Sarah L. Vass, Anna Vass, Apphia Vass, and P. E. Vass and their heirs forever.

I appoint my beloved friend, Jarratt W. Cook, my executor to the will, who is to receive a reasonable sum out of my estate for his services.

In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 13th day of December 1816. /s/ Philip Vass (seal) Witness: Anderson Powell and Moses Shearon

The court record contains several proceedings relating to the probate of the estate of Philip Vass which was first entered at a session of Halifax court held on 25 Jul 1825:

This reading purporting to be the last will & testament of Philip Vass, dec'd, was (illegible) court by Jarratt W. Cook the exr therein named for probat. Whereupon on the motion of Alexander Boyd & John Sheppard, they are admitted defendants to contest the said writing as the last will & testament of the sd Philip Vass, dec'd, and on motion of the said exr, commissioners are awarded him to take the depositions of John Webb of the county of Granville in the state of North Carolina and of Moses Shearing of this county to be read as evidence in the said conteste. And at another court held for the sd county the 22nd day of August 1825. For reasons appearing to the court the defendants by their attorney a commissioner is awarded them to take the deposition of Leonard Pam???, an inform witness in this case to be read de bene epo, they giving to the plfff legal notice of the time & place of executing the same.

The administrators were back in court on 28 Mar 1826 and again on 23 Sep 1826. Finally, at a court held on 22 Jan 1827, Jarratt W. Cook, the executor name in the will, failed to appear and Elizabeth declined to accept the administration. Therefore, on the motion of Isaac Medley who, along with Charles A. Ballson posted bond in the amount of \$30,000, letters of administration were granted to him on the estate. From his will and other sources, it seems that Philip and Elizabeth (Webb) Vass had the following children: Ann Vass, Apphia Vass, Elizabeth Vass, Sarah L. Vass, James Philip Vass, and Philip E. Vass. Philip E. died without issue. James Philip Vass had several children including a daughter, Mary Terry Vass, and son Stephen Taylor Vass. There were also other children.

Boyd Family Excursus

While her name is unknown, it seems possible that another wife of Vincent Vass Sr. was a member of the Boyd family of King and Queen, or at least connected with that line. It has been previously noted that there was a Col. William Boyd who purchased a plantation on the Mattapony River in King and Queen County called "Clifton." His wife was Mary Robinson, daughter of Speaker John Robinson. Also, the name Boyd has been previously encountered in connection with the Benjamin Rust family of Richmond County. In the discussion there, there was note of a chancery suit in which Sarah Degraffen-

reid (daughter of Vincent Vass Sr. and his wife, Ann Rust) and Vincent Degraffenreid, her eldest son and heir at law of Baker Degraffenreid, were plaintiffs. The defendants were Peter Rust (executor of Hannah Rust, the surviving executrix of Benjamin Rust), Anthony Gardner (who was the administrator of the estate of Spencer Boyd of King and Queen County), William M. Hawkins, Spencer Boyd (son of Spencer Boyd, deceased), Robert Boyd, John Didlake, Betty Boyd (widow of James Boyd, deceased), Vincent Vass, and William Boyd (an infant represented by William M. Hawkins, his guardian). As will be seen, Gardner, Hawkins, and Didlake lived in King and Queen and had connections to the Boyd family there.

Besides these relationships, there is one more that ties the Boyds to Vincent Vass Sr. It comes from a chancery suit called *Boyds administrators and Nelson's executors*. The case was brought in the 1790s by William and Thomas Nelson, executors of the last will and testament of Thomas Nelson, Esq., deceased, against Anthony Gardner, administrator of Spencer Boyd, deceased. They claimed that Thomas Nelson, Esq., obtained a judgment in the King and Queen County court in April 1755 for £500 current money and also a quantity of tobacco, against Spencer Boyd and Vincent Vass, with James Boyd their security. They claimed this had never been paid. A jury was seated on 25 Apr 1792 and after deliberation it decided "that Vincent Vass hath paid the debt in the declaration mentioned as in pleading . . . (and therefore) the plaintiffs take nothing by their bill aforesaid." So, again, we have Vincent Vass Sr. connected to Spencer Boyd and his brother, James Boyd. Here follows a short sketch of this Boyd family.

The Boyd family of King and Queen descends from Dr. James Boyd who was himself, a descendant of the Boyds of Trochrig and Penkill in Ayrshire on the western coast of Scotland.⁶⁷ The Trochrig line can be traced back to Adam Boyd whose wife was Helen Kennedy. Their son, James Boyd, was the 1st laird of Trochrig and Archbishop of Glasgow. He married Margaret Chalmers, daughter of James Chalmers. James Boyd died in 1581. The line descended through successive generations to Robert Boyd, the 6th laird of Trochrig who became the 8th laird of Penkill as the two lines had merged. On 28 Feb 1752, Robert was served as heir male to Alexander Boyd, 7th laird of Penkill, tracing decent of each from Adam Boyd, 1st laird of Penkill. This Robert Boyd died Nov 1761 without male issue. He had two daughters, Ann and Grace; the elder, married William Boyd Robertson, by whom she had a daughter who sold the Trochrig estate. However, the Penkill estate went to Dr. James Boyd, the son of

⁶⁷ For a detailed history of this Boyd family in Scotland, see Seymour Clarke, *The Boyds of Penkill and Trochrig, Their Ancestors and Descendants* (Edinburgh and London: W. Blackwood and Sons, 1909). Also see the web site of the Clan Boyd society for updated information: <http://clanboyd.info/history/> .

John Boyd, the 5th laird of Trochrig, and it was this James Boyd that left Scotland and settled in King and Queen County.

1. As stated, Dr. James Boyd was the first of the line in Virginia, coming to King and Queen from Ayr, Scotland, in 1721. On 13 May 1726, he married Mary Thatch in King and Queen. Some claim she was a daughter of Spencer Thatch, but there is no proof of this in the records. She may, however, be related to a John Thach or Thack, who appears in the vestry records of Stratton Major Parish in King & Queen. This name appears first in the vestry minutes for 13 Sep 1735 when Captain Gaynes (Gaines), William Lyne, and John Thack were ordered to procession the land in the precinct between the western branch of the Arracacoe Swamp and the Tarsatyan Swamp. His name last appears on 13 Oct 1746 when the vestry ordered the churchwardens to pay Mr. James Power for prosecuting a suit against John Thack.

James Boyd was a “Practioner of medicine” and received his medical degree before he arrived in Virginia. It is not unlikely he studied in Edinburgh or some other university in that country. On 11 Sep 1753, James Wetherspoon was deposed in the County of King & Queen. In his deposition, Wetherspoon says he knew James Boyd and that he first came to Virginia in 1721. According to Wetherspoon, Boyd told him he was from Ayr in Scotland, and that if he met with any success as a doctor, he would stay in the colony. Wetherspoon also testified that James Boyd married Mary Thatch and that Spencer Boyd was his eldest son. There is an old house in King and Queen called “Poplar Grove” which became a Boyd home (see *infra*). It is reported that a large bronze mortar was found buried in the meat house there, which predated the house itself. This mortar bears the date 1722 and the name James Boyd.⁶⁸

Dr. Boyd first appears in the Virginia records 1 Aug 1721, on which date he came into court in Middlesex County, Virginia as plaintiff against the widow, Anne Mayo. On 4 Oct 1721, Boyd is mentioned in the vestry book of Petsworth Parish, Gloucester County, Virginia. The entry reads, “To Dr. James Boyd for (visits and medicines) to Mary Yates, 1000 pounds of tobacco.” On 8 Oct 1721, he and James Mackendree witnessed the will of Stephen Field of King and Queen, and he proved the will at King and Queen Courthouse on 26 Feb 1721. On 2 Feb 1721/22, the court found in favor of Boyd and awarded him four hogsheads of tobacco. The Middlesex court records for 7 Feb 1721/22 note that Samuel Shepherd of King and Queen traveled to Middlesex to give evidence in the case of *James Boyd vs. Ann Mayo* for which Boyd was ordered to pay Shepherd for his comings and goings. Boyd appears twice more in the Middlesex court records. On 4 Jun 1723, he sued George Walker, and on 5 May

⁶⁸ Virginia D. Cox and Willie T. Weathers, *Old Houses of King and Queen County, Virginia* (Richmond, VA: King and Queen County Historical Society, 1973), p. 184.

1724, he sued Catherine Perrott, administratrix of Robert Perrott. These were probably suits to recover debts owed him for medical services provided. There is an entry in the vestry book of Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County, Virginia dated 9 Oct 1730 which records a payment of 1280 pounds of tobacco to “Dr. James Boyd, as per account.”

Boyd was also engaged in the mercantile business. He died testate on 2 May 1734, but his will is now lost. It is presumed his widow, Mary, remarried, but when she did, or to whom, is not presently known. She was still unmarried on 9 Jun 1738, when she appeared on that date as Mary Boyd in a court held in Caroline County, which is adjacent to King and Queen.

Just how many children Dr. James and Mary Boyd had is unclear. In a deposition given on 4 Sep 1753 by Richard Shackleford of King and Queen, the deponent stated that he was a near neighbor of Dr. James Boyd and that he (Boyd) “had several children.” This would seem to suggest he had more than two. The following family tree is based on currently available evidence, but is certainly subject to revision if new information emerges. As an aside, Richard Shackleford lived in King and Queen at “Farm Hill” plantation which is located on the wedge of land which runs down to the Mattaponi River between Burnt Mill Creek and Tastine or Tarsatyan Swamp, which is today called Corbin’s Mill Creek. This plantation was in Shackleford’s possession as early as 1732. Richard Shackleford made his will 19 Sep 1773 and it was proved 11 Oct 1773. It names sons William, Roger, and Zachariah, and daughter Frances who married Francis Gaines, and daughter Elizabeth who married Richard Taliaferro. Issue of Dr. James Boyd and his wife Mary Thatch:

a. Spencer Boyd. Since he was the heir of Dr. James, it would appear he was the eldest son. Records indicate he was born 12 Feb 1727. Presumably, this was the “old style” date. If so, he was born 12 Feb 1728 “new style.” He first appears in the records on 22 Jul 1751 when the vestry of Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen, ordered Robert Ware, William Ware, and Spencer Boyd to procession the land “between the Branch next above William Hunts and the Extent upward.” On 13 Jul 1757, he and his brother James Boyd witnessed the will of John Crockford of King and Queen. His last appearance in the vestry records of Stratton Major comes on 28 Sep 1779, when the entry notes that Gregory Smith is appointed a vestry man in the stead of Spencer Boyd deceased. Spencer Boyd was married twice; however, neither the given name, nor the surname of his first wife is known. It is likely she died prior to 10 Dec 1766 since on that date he made a prenuptial agreement with his intended second wife, Lucy, whose surname is also unknown. Spencer Boyd drew his will on 7 Dec 1778, and it was proved 10 Mar 1779. Unfortunately, the will was lost in a fire in Williamsburg, Virginia, but an abstract of the will made before the fire exists. According to this abstract, the will named sons James, Robert, Spencer, and William, and daughter Julia. It also mentioned the “child my wife now goes with.” This

posthumous child was probably Mary Boyd, known as “Molly.” The will also mentioned nephew Spencer Boyd and his sister Elizabeth. Spencer’s wife Lucy is very likely the Lucy Boyd who married William Didlake of King and Queen on 7 Jan 1787. The marriage is recorded in the Christ Church Parish register of Middlesex County, Virginia. The register of Christ Church also notes the marriage of James Didlake and Mary Gardner, widow of John Gardner of King and Queen, who died about 1784. Mary Macon, born 1 Dec 1755, was the daughter of Henry Macon and Catherine Byrd. John Gardner’s first wife was Elizabeth Field, daughter of Stephen—recall that on 8 Oct 1721 Dr. James Boyd witnessed the will of an earlier Stephen Field. John Gardner was the brother of Dr. Anthony Gardner and also of Elizabeth Gardner who married Maj. Thomas Row or Rowe of King and Queen. They were the parents of James G. Row who married Harriet Hawkins, widow of William M. Hawkins. So we see here many of the connections in the previously mentioned chancery suit by Sarah Degraffenreid and Vincent Degraffenreid her eldest son and heir at law of Baker Degraffenreid deceased, plaintiffs against Peter Rust, executor of Hannah Rust, who was surviving executrix of Benjamin Rust, Anthony Gardner administrator with the will attached of Spencer Boyd deceased, William M. Hawkins, Spencer Boyd, Robert Boyd, John Didlake, Betty Boyd widow of James Boyd deceased and Vincent Vass and William Boyd an infant by William M. Hawkins his guardian, defendants. This case is mentioned in a legal notice of 18 Mar 1796 in the *Virginia Gazette, and General Advertiser*, Richmond, Virginia, 27 Apr 1796 edition. The notice reads, “The defendant Spencer Boyd not having entered an appearance and given security to the satisfaction of the court that he is not an inhabitant of this country: on the motion of the plaintiffs by their counsel, that the said defendant do not appear here on the fifth day of next September term, and answer the bill of the plaintiffs, and that a copy of this order be forthwith inserted in some newspaper of the city of Richmond, for two months successively and posted at the front door of the capitol in the said city.” Issue of Spencer Boyd by his first wife whose name is unknown:

- i. James Boyd. He was the 11th laird of Pinkill. It is said he married a “kinswoman” named Betty Boyd, most probably his cousin Elizabeth Boyd, daughter of his uncle James and his wife Betty Gaines (see *infra*). Marriages between cousins were not uncommon in this period in Virginia. James and Betty died without issue. She is the Betty Boyd of Henrico County, Virginia that is also mentioned in a legal notice of 29 Sep 1790 in the *Virginia Gazette and General Advertiser*. It states that her late husband James Boyd died seized in fee tail of the Pinkill estate, Scotland. It also refers to her efforts to recover her dower rights and revokes a power of attorney which she had previously given to Thomas Brown, a former partner in the King and Queen mercantile firm of Boyd and Brown. There is still extant a copy of an account between “Dr. Spencer Boyd of Pinkill,” late in Virginia, presently in Glasgow, but a resident of King and Queen County, Virginia, merchant, and Thomas Brown, former part-

ners in the firm of Boyd and Brown. The account covers the period 1770-1782, and includes the cost of Thomas Brown's passage to Virginia, £10. There is also a probative certificate by Betty Boyd, widow of James Boyd of King and Queen, on the one hand, and on the other Robert Ware of Middlesex County, attorney for Spencer Boyd in Ayrshire, regarding an agreement entered into on 12 Aug 1796 and filed in the Chancery District court, Williamsburg, Virginia, in a suit commenced by Betty Boyd against Lyne Shackelford, executor of Thomas Brown. This certificate refers to the lands of Pinkill Ayrshire.

ii. Robert Boyd. He married Frances Bird who lived at the aforementioned "Poplar Grove" in King and Queen. His King and Queen will was made 30 Aug 1820. Issue of Robert Boyd and his wife Frances Bird:

1. Frances Boyd.

2. (Col.) Robert Bird Boyd married Mary A. Pryor of Williamsburg, whose second husband was Walker Hawes of King William County, Virginia. Boyd's will is dated 30 May 1838, and it was proved 11 Jun 1838. According to a newspaper account, he died 31 May 1838 at "Poplar Grove," age 25, and is buried in a family cemetery there. His grave marker indicates he was born 2 Mar 1811 and died 31 May 1838, so there is some question about his age as per the newspaper account. This cemetery also contains the body of a John Alexander Boyd who died in 1827. He may be the brother or a son of John Foster Boyd (see *infra*). Issue of Robert Bird Boyd and Mary Pryor:

a. Mary Frances "Fanny" Boyd who married Capt. Marius Pendleton Todd. Their issue:

i. Wm. Burnett, born 1855

ii. Robert, born 1856

iii. Henry Garland, born 1857

iv. Mary Eliza, born 1863 and died young

v. Frances "Fanny," born 1862

vi. Maria Pendleton, born 1865

b. Roberta Bird Boyd married John Washington of Caroline County, Virginia.⁶⁹

A history of Caroline County by Marshall Wingfield gives the following history of this Washington family. John Washington, nephew of President George Washington, was married in 1770 to Eliza-

⁶⁹ *The Virginia Genealogist*, vol. 18, p. 26.

beth Buckner, sister of Captain George Buckner of “Braynefield,” Caroline County. They had two sons, John Washington, born 1772 who died without issue, and George Washington who married Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. John Coates of Maryland. Their issue included Catherine (born 1796), George (born 1798), John (born 1800), Susan Elizabeth (born 1802), Ann (born 1802), Selina (born 1806), Dorothea (born 1808), William (born 1810), Elizabeth (born 1812) and Caroline (born 1814). William Washington (born 1810) married Ann Vass, the eldest daughter of Mordecai Abrahams of King William County, Virginia.⁷⁰ The marriage was performed 11 Mar 1831 by Rev. Mr. Hatchett. Col. John Washington (born 1800) married Ann Hawes and had one son, George Washington who married Mildred Chandler. Their issue included Thomas, John, George, Cora, William, Clement and Henry Washington. Their second son, John Washington, married Roberta Bird Boyd as noted previously. Issue of Roberta Bird Boyd and John Washington:

- i. John
- ii. Mary A.
- iii. Dolly B.
- iv. Walker H.
- v. Eugene B.
- vi. Fannie P.
- vii. Roberta K.

iii. Spencer Boyd. Served 12th laird of Pinkill and returned to Scotland about 1792. He was a captain of the Ayrshire Fencible Cavalry and in Scotland lived at “Piedmont” a tract of land owned by the Boyd’s since 1544. He married 28 Nov 1796 Sarah, daughter of Joseph Wilkinson of Carlisle, England. Spencer died 1807 and is buried at Old Dailly Churchyard, Ayr, Scotland. Sarah died 10 Dec 1857, age 79.

iv. William Boyd. Known as Col. William, he married Mary “Polly” Robinson, daughter of Speaker John Robinson of “Pleasant Hill.” Robinson’s plantation was situated on the Mattaponi River, and just above it was the plantation called “Clifton,” which was built by Robinson before the Revolution. Heartquake Creek flows into the Mattaponi River just above “Clifton.” It is pictured on the Fry-Jefferson map. Col. William Boyd purchased “Clifton” about 1805, and the Boyds resided there until 1816, when the original house burned. Col. Boyd then rebuilt the house on the same walls. Col. Wil-

⁷⁰ Despite investigation this Ann Vass could not be identified. If her father was indeed Mordecai Abrahams, then she may have married first to a Vass and then to Washington.

William Boyd also had a tract of land in King and Queen called "Piedmont," which was probably named after the tract of that name in Ayr, Scotland that belonged to the Boyd family. Mary Polly (Robinson) Boyd died 21 Feb 1821, and her husband, Col. William, then married a Mrs. Hoomes, whose maiden name was Dabney. Following Col. William's death, Mrs. (Dabney) (Hoomes) Boyd married, thirdly, Samuel H. Stout of Orange court House. Their children were Thomas Henry; John Lumpkin; Emily who married Lewis Henry Garnett, son of Judge Garnett of Essex, by whom a son Carroll Garnett; and Robert. The Stout name will be encountered again later in connection with a plantation in King and Queen called "Melrose." Issue of William Boyd and his wife Mary Robinson:

1. William B. Boyd. He died without issue in Baltimore, Maryland, where he is buried at Greenmount Cemetery.

2. Lucy Ann Boyd. She was married to Col. William Armistead at "Clifton" on 6 May 1824 by the Rev. William Todd of Mattaponi Baptist Church. They lived for a short time at "Liberty Hall" in King and Queen before moving to Alabama.

- v. Julia Boyd. She married a Mr. Hart of King and Queen County.

- vi. Mary Boyd. Known as "Molly," she may have married a Mr. Soanes of King and Queen. There is an old Soanes cemetery in King and Queen located off Route 14 near Heartquake Creek on land owned by the Carlton family in 1980. It contains two graves. One is that of John Foster Boyd who died in 1818. The other is that of Mrs. John Foster Boyd (Mary) who died in 1827. Henry Soanes received several grants of land in King and Queen. In 1782, the residue of the Soanes estate was charged to John Soanes (191 acres) and James Soanes (191 acres). Two years later, the tax records show that the total acreage of 382 acres was charged to Mary Soanes. This land was subsequently acquired by a John Boyd and through his family connections passed to Colonel Robert Bland of King and Queen and his heirs. The name Mary Soanes also appears on the 1787 personal property tax list for King and Queen. This same personal property tax list also mentions the James Boyd estate, John Boyd, and the Spencer Boyd estate.

- b. James Boyd. Little is known about James. He first appears in the records in the chancery suit mentioned earlier brought by William and Thomas Nelson. They argued that their father had obtained a judgment in the King and Queen court in April 1755 against Spencer Boyd, Vincent Vass, and that James Boyd was their security. James Boyd again appears in the King and Queen records on 13 Jul 1757, when he and his brother Spencer were witnesses to the will of John Crockford of King and Queen. He next appears in the vestry records of Stratton Major Parish on 27 Jul 1759, when he, Robert Garrett, and Richard Garrett were appointed to procession that precinct of land lying between the Tar-

satyan and Great Heartquake Swamps. Since processioners were generally chosen to procession land in their neighborhood, he must have lived in this area. His name does not appear as a processioner on 8 Nov 1763, he having been replaced by John Nichols. There is some support for the view that his wife was Elizabeth “Betty” Gaines of King and Queen, the daughter of Francis Gaines whose wife was also called “Betty.” This conjecture is based on the 1774 King and Queen will of Francis Gaines together with records from a subsequent chancery suit involving the Gaines estate. Francis Gaines and his family lived in King and Queen on a plantation called “Gainesboro.” This plantation later came into possession of James Boyd who left it to his son, Dr. James Boyd of King and Queen, who married the daughter of Dr. William F. Bland of King and Queen, son of Col. Robert Bland of “Lombardy Grove,” in King and Queen.

“Gainesboro” was originally the plantation belonging to Capt. Robert Gaines of King and Queen. By 1732, Gaines was a member of the vestry of Stratton Major Parish He died before Oct 1745 leaving several children including Francis Gaines, Robert Gaines, and Harry Gaines, the well-known colonial builder. Francis Gaines was a member of the Stratton Major Parish vestry by 1745. He married Elizabeth and died in 1774 at “Gainesboro.” His children included son Francis Gaines; Catherine Gaines, who married Charles Collier of King and Queen; Hannah Gaines who married a Bray; Thomas Gaines; Harry Gaines; and Elizabeth “Betty” Gaines. Son Francis married Frances Shackleford, daughter of Richard Shackleford of King and Queen. In 1794, Francis moved to Henrico County. His plantation later came into the possession of James Boyd Sr., who married Betty Gaines, Francis’ daughter. Their son was Dr. James T. Boyd who married Lucy E. _____. Issue of James and Betty Boyd:

- i. Spencer Boyd. He is mentioned in the 7 Dec 1778 will of his uncle Spencer.
- ii. Elizabeth Boyd. She is mentioned in the 7 Dec 1778 will of her uncle Spencer, and may have been named for her mother.
- iii. Dr. James Boyd, physician in King and Queen.
- iv. Louisa Anne Boyd (b. 10 Oct 1835, d. 19 Nov 1911). There is a newspaper notice from the *Richmond Enquirer* of 21 Dec 1852 that has this account of her marriage: Married at Gainesboro 16 Nov 1852, the residence of her father, Dr. James T. Boyd, by Rev. Wm. S. Bland, Dr. Wm. F. Bland to Miss Louisiana (sic: Louisa Anne) Boyd, all of King and Queen. Dr. William F. Bland was from the plantation in King and Queen called “Lombardy Grove.” The son of Dr. William F. Bland and Louisa Anne was William Boyd Bland.

v. Frances Foster Boyd. A notice in the *Richmond Enquirer* of 14 Sep 1852 mentions this child: Died, of whooping cough and bilious fever, at Gainesboro, in King and Queen County, on the 3rd instant (i.e., 3 Sep 1852) sweet little Fanny Foster Boyd, aged 18 months, 3 weeks, 5 days.

vi. Lucy A. Boyd. Another Richmond newspaper notice of 5 Nov 1841 refers to this daughter: Married at Gainesboro, the seat of James T. Boyd, M.D. 27 Oct 1841 by Rev. Joseph Davis of the M.E. Church, James Hugh Henry, Esq. to Lucy A. Boyd, second daughter of the late Francis Row, all of King and Queen. There is no obvious explanation why Lucy A. Boyd is referred to as a daughter of Francis Row or Rowe. This information comes from an abstract so there could possibly be a transcription error and the lady called Lucy A. Boyd was actually Lucy A. Rowe. Another newspaper notice of 27 Dec 1844 again refers to Francis Rowe: Married at the residence of Dr. Boyd in King and Queen, 24 Dec 1844, by Rev. Thomas P. Evans, Mr. Edwin Cocke of Richmond, Virginia to miss Betty F. G. Rowe, eldest daughter of the late Francis Rowe, Esq. of King and Queen.

It has been noted that Dr. James Boyd was descended from the Scottish Boyds of Trochrig and Penkill. Upon the death of Dr. James, the title descended to Spencer Boyd, his eldest son, and upon his death, to his brother, James, who became the 11th laird. Following his death, the title descended to his son, Spencer, who became the 12th laird of Pinkill—this Spencer subsequently returned to Scotland about 1792. However, while James held the Penkill estate as the 11th laird (this was James who married his cousin Betty Gaines), the rent from this estate was some £200 a year, but James had debts of around £4,500, according to one court proceeding, so he decided to sell the estate. For this purpose, he entered into an agreement with Carter Braxton of King William County for £6,000 in 1783.⁷¹ The agreement included Braxton's two sons, Carter and Corbin, then students at the University of St. Andrews, in Scotland. James Boyd died in 1784 and in 1786, the Braxtons attempted to convey the Penkill estate to a man named Archibald Govan, formerly a merchant in King and Queen County, but then living in London. Many Scots merchants remained loyal to the Crown during the Revolution and fled to the mother country. In the interim, one of the creditors of the estate had commenced a suit against Spencer Boyd, younger brother and heir of James, in order that the estate should be sold to pay debts. Govan brought an action preventing Boyd from doing anything with the estate. At the same time, Spencer Boyd brought a counter action to declare all the deeds of transfer of the estate to the Braxtons and to Govan to be void, alleging that Carter Braxton had taken a fraudulent advantage and

⁷¹ Carter Braxton was the son of George Braxton, a wealthy planter of "Newington," plantation in King and Queen, where he was born 10 Sep 1736 and died 10 Oct 1797. His mother was the daughter of Robert "King" Carter." Carter Braxton was one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence.

that the deeds in favor of Braxton had been executed according to usage in Virginia. Govan dismisses these objections. The court found in his favor but this ruling was overturned on appeal.⁷²

Thomas Vass

Origin in King and Queen County

The first mention the writer has yet found of the name Thomas Vass in King and Queen is an entry in the vestry book of Stratton Major Parish. There, it is noted that at a meeting held 14 Nov 1770, Thomas Vass was paid 1,000 pounds of tobacco for his services as (lay) reader. These same records also show that at a meeting of the vestry on 1 Oct 1771, Thomas was again paid as a reader but no amount was specified. He is mentioned again in a list of so-called “Public Service Claims” found in the archives of the Virginia State Library. They document those who contributed support to the American Army during the Revolution. One such certificate, dated King and Queen County, 30 Sep 1780, is marked: “Received from Tho’s Vass 2 gal, 3 qts, 1 pt brandy. £17.17.6. Signed Robert Hill.” The payment for these supplies was in current money, which had little value or “not worth a continental” as the saying of the day went. Another certificate, dated King and Queen County, April 1781, is marked: “Rec’d from John Walton, one beef for Stalling. £450.0.0. Signed Rob’ Hill Comr. Endorsed: “Octr 1st (17)83 Tho: Vass Assignee, John Walton £2.16.3 U. States.”

The name Thomas Vass also appears on the land tax books of King and Queen which begin in 1782. They show that from 1782 until 1800, he was taxed on 250 acres. However, his name could not be found on the 1801 list indicating he disposed of the King and Queen land about this time. Importantly, a search of the extant personal property tax records of the county does not show the name Thomas Vass or any other Vass. This would seem to suggest that he was probably living elsewhere by 1790, most probably having left the county some time between 1783 and 1788, when he appears in the early Baptist records of North Carolina. His ministry is discussed later in this paper.

Although not proved, it seems likely the 250 acres charged to Thomas Vass on the King and Queen land tax books is the same tract of land mentioned in the will of Thomas’ daughter, Fanny Vass. Her will is dated 22 May 1792, and was proved in Granville County, North Carolina at May term of court, 1799. In it, Fanny (probably Frances) referred to as “Fanny Voss of Caroline County, Virginia,” leaves to her father, Thomas Vass, land in King and Queen County, Virginia, it “being part of a tract

⁷² Discussion of the legal aspects of the appeal can be found in George Ross, *Leading Cases in the Law of Scotland* by George Ross (Edinburgh, Scotland, 1849) and Robert Bell, *Cases Decided in the court of Session, From November 1790 to July 1792* (Edinburgh, Scotland, 1794).

given to her deceased mother by her father Thomas Foster.” Fanny’s will was witnessed by Vincent Vass, Caty Vass, and Dorothy Stone. This may be the Vincent Vass of Caroline County, Virginia, who sold to Thomas Vass of Granville, County, North Carolina, for the “sum of fifty pounds . . . a certain yellow Negro by the name of Joe.” This deed of sale is found in the deed books of Granville County. The records of Granville also show that on 7 May 1799, Thomas Vass and Memucan Hunt entered bond on Fanny’s estate. The court appointed Thomas administrator. At August court, the inventory of Fanny Voss, deceased, was entered by Thomas Vass her administrator. It consisted of one Negro slave woman named “Ursley,” valued at £30.0, cash in hand, and two pine chests containing her wearing apparel.

Incidentally, the King and Queen land tax books also show that a Thomas Foster was taxed on 214 acres from 1782-1791. However, from 1792-1794, Foster was taxed on 137 3/4 acres. Then, beginning in 1795, Foster was taxed on 87 3/4 acres. Foster was taxed on these 87 3/4 acres at least through 1803. The name Thomas Foster also appears on the 1790 personal property tax rolls of King and Queen. His exact relation to Fanny is not known, but he could, perhaps, be a brother.

There is no information to suggest a birth date for Fanny Vass. However, she was old enough to execute a will devising real property in May of 1792. If we assume she was at least twenty-one years old in 1792, this would indicate a date of birth of about 1771, or before. There is no evidence to suggest she ever married. Since the land tax books of King and Queen do not mention her name, it is likely her land may have been held in her father’s name. In other words, the 250 acres charged to Thomas Vass in the King and Queen land tax books may well have been the land left to Fanny by her mother, who was a daughter of Thomas Foster. If so, Thomas Vass would have obtained a good title to this land when Fanny died about 1799, as her will was proved in May of that year. This would then have allowed her father then to dispose of the land, which he may have done about 1800.

It has already been noted that there was a Thomas Foster in King and Queen County in Stratton Major Parish, where he was a vestryman of the parish. More specifically, the vestry records show he was on the vestry from 8 Apr 1729 through a vestry meeting held on 10 Oct 1740. However, at a subsequent meeting held on 10 Apr 1741, the vestry ordered that Mr. Charles Collier be appointed to the vestry “in room of” (meaning, in place of) Mr. Thomas Foster, deceased. John Foster, his son, appears in the vestry records on 3 Aug 1743 when he, Gregory Smith, and Nicholas Dillard were ordered to procession the precinct between Pepetico Swamp and the southern branch of Arracacoe, so it is supposed he took his father’s place on the Stratton Major vestry.

The series *Genealogies of Virginia Families* contains an extensive discussion of the Smith family of Middlesex County by Mr. Edward Jaquelin Davison, wherein it is stated that Thomas Foster married Elizabeth Smith of Middlesex County in 1743. Elizabeth was born 19 Apr 1722, the daughter of Thomas Smith of Middlesex who died 14 Mar 1723, and his wife Ann Gregory. Thomas Smith and his wife, Ann, also had other children, including sons Thomas, Anthony, and Gregory, and daughters Martha and Ann. Daughter Ann Smith, born in Middlesex in 1719, married James Gardner. Her brother, Gregory Smith, born 31 Dec 1712, married Lucy Cooke who married, as her second husband, Thomas Booth, her cousin. James Gardner is discussed in more detail in a later section of this paper.

Ann Gregory was the daughter of Richard Gregory, who died in King and Queen about 1699. Ann's brother was Col. Roger Gregory who married Mildred (Washington) Lewis, widow of John Lewis of King and Queen. Roger Gregory owned land in King and Queen adjacent to John Dixon. He later sold this tract to Gregory Smith, brother of Elizabeth Smith, who married Thomas Foster. Gregory Smith owned Shepherd's warehouse on the Mattaponi River near present-day West Point, Virginia. He devised the land to his nephew, Thomas Gregory Smith. Malcolm Harris gives a good discussion of Shepherd's warehouse and because of its importance to this discussion of Thomas Vass it is transcribed in full as follows:

The Act of the General Assembly passed in 1730 gave authority for the establishment of the warehouse in King and Queen County at Shepherd's. This warehouse stood close to the site of Roger Gregory's dwelling house on the upper side of the Mattaponi River across from West Point. There is a public landing at the place to this day.

The salary of the Inspectors, and the rental for the warehouse, which was privately owned by Samuel Shepherd, were written in the laws concerning Warehouses in 1734.

It is evident that Samuel Shepherd had lived in the county of Middlesex for his will was probated there in 1752.

The will of Samuel Shepherd, of King and Queen County dated 9 Nov 1751 and proved 11 Feb 1752 by Richard Tunstall, clerk of King and Queen Co. named wife Mildred and gave her land or the disposition thereof; Sons: Robert and Samuel Daus: Elizabeth, Ann, Mary, Mildred, and Frances Shepherd.

This place was the site of the warehouse, which was operated by the Shepherds from 1731 until the warehouses were abandoned. The site of the early warehouse was on the upper side of the Mattaponi River, a short distance below the mouth of Arracaico Creek, which is now called Burnt Mill Creek.

Henry Fenton was granted on December 1, 1649, a tract of land lying on the upper side of Mattaponi River on the east side thereof, bounded northward upon the river and southwest upon a creek dividing this from the land of Richard Major and northwest upon the river including Fenton's Creek.

It is not known how long Henry Fenton owned this land, for his name does not appear in any of the extant records for King and Queen County.

In 1687, Richard Gregory was granted 850 acres of land on the northwest side of the Mattaponi River, in New Kent County. This corresponds to the tract which had been granted to Henry Fenton.

Richard Gregory died in the Spring of 1699, while representing the county of King and Queen in the General Assembly. He was replaced by Mr. William Gooch. A few years later, when the Tithing Lists for the county of King and Queen were set up in 1704, Frances Gregory, widow, was charged with 700 acres of land.

There are a few records concerning land in this area, which confirm the residence of the Gregorys; for in 1729, Roger Gregory, who was living in King and Queen County, and the only Gregory known to be in the county at that time, owned land next to the lands of John Dixon, who had a patent issued for a tract of land on Arycaico Creek, in which the Gregory's church road is mentioned.

Roger Gregory had succeeded his father as owner of the plantation on the Mattaponi River, and he was living here when he married Mildred Lewis, the widow of John Lewis. Mildred Gregory was a widow but a short time after her husband died in 1718, and she married Roger Gregory within the year. To this marriage were born three daughters, who, with their mother, moved to the neighborhood of Fredericksburg soon after Roger Gregory died.

The plantation was sold by the Gregorys to Gregory Smith, whose mother was a sister of Roger Gregory. Ann Gregory married Thomas Smith of Middlesex County.

Gregory Smith lived here for less than ten years, for his will made in 1737, was proved after 1744. His widow, Lucy Cooke, and his children continued to live at the home of Shepherd's warehouse: she married for her second husband Thomas Boothe, who was her cousin, and he died in 1756.

Gregory Smith inherited the land at Shepherd's warehouse, which his father had purchased from the heirs of Roger Gregory, and in his will, written in 1789, he devised to his nephew Thomas Gregory Smith his lands in King and Queen County.

The foregoing suggests that the Smiths of Middlesex were well acquainted with the Thomas Foster and Samuel Shepherd lines. Moreover, there is a Middlesex County chancery suit, *Vass vs. Shackelford*, which provides a connection between the Vass family of King and Queen and the Shepherd line. In a proceeding of that county court of May 1781, a Thomas Vass and his wife Sarah (Shepherd) testify about two slaves. During the testimony, Thomas mentions a Richard Shackelford who died in King and Queen in either 1774 or 1775, leaving a will. From other testimony in the suit, the following information can be ascertained. A John Crockford died in King and Queen in 1749. He had a son John Crockford Jr., who died in 1742 without issue. John Crockford Sr. also had two daughters. One, Mildred Crockford, who died in 1781, married Samuel Shepherd of King and Queen, who died 9 Nov 1751. He was the same Samuel who owned of Shepherd's warehouse. Another daughter, Mary Crock-

ford, married 19 Jun 1729 in Middlesex County to Jacob Faulkner. John Crockford also left a slave to his granddaughter Elizabeth Jeffries.

After Samuel Shepherd died in 1751, his widow married John Townley. Mildred Crockford and Samuel Shepherd had issue: John Shepherd, who went to North Carolina about 1767, William Shepherd who also went to North Carolina, Frances Shepherd, who married Richard Crittenden, Mildred Shepherd, who married a Mr. Burch, and Sarah Shepherd, who married Thomas Vass of King and Queen County.

The will of Samuel Shepherd can be found in the Middlesex County records. It is dated 9 Nov 1751, and was proved 11 Feb 1752 in King and Queen. The will mentions sons Robert and Samuel Shepherd, and five daughters: Elizabeth, Ann, Mary, Mildred, and Frances. It also mentions his wife as being pregnant at time will was drawn. This posthumous child was, in fact, Sarah Shepherd, proving that she was born in 1752.

There was a good deal of testimony in this chancery suit, which established a number of facts including the following derived from depositions in the case: Mary Faulkner stated that her husband moved from his home in Orange County to King and Queen soon after the death of John Crockford, the younger, and at the request of John Crockford, the elder. In King and Queen County in 1759, there was a division of the slaves of John Crockford, the Younger, between John Townley and Mildred Townley, and Jacob and Mary Faulkner. On 25 Jul 25, 1789, in King and Queen County, Robert Ware deposed that Mildred Townley died in Oct or Nov of 1781, and that Beck, the slave, was in the possession of Mr. Zachariah Shackelford, Sr. Previous to that, the slave was in the possession of Mr. Richard Shackelford, Sr., having come from Mr. John Crockford. In addition, John Crittenden, aged twenty-two, deposed that the year before the death of his grandmother, Mrs. Mildred Townley, she requested that her slaves be divided between her two daughters, Frances Crittenden and Sarah. John Crittenden also mentions his uncle Robert Townley and his father Richard Crittenden. Benjamin Dabney deposed that Zachariah Shackelford was the surviving executor of Richard Shackelford, deceased, and was involved in a suit with Thomas Vass in Middlesex County. Robert Pollard, aged twenty-nine, deposed that he lived with Samuel Shepherd and that Mrs. Shepherd's father had given the slave Beck to her. John Waller, aged 46, deposed that Samuel Shepherd sent for him a few days before his death to have him write his will. John Crockford, Sr. was present at that time.

There is also a note connected with this chancery suit which states: "Sir – it is supposed that Mr. John Shepherd is still living though he has not been seen in Virginia since June 1st 1767 his abode was in North Carolina. William Shepherd lives in North Carolina. Those are Mrs. Crittenden's Brothers."

On 31 May 31 1781 in Middlesex County, Thomas Vass and Sarah Vass, his wife, replied to Zachariah Shackelford that Richard Shackelford purchased the two slaves named Beck from John Townley in 1760, and that Shackelford died in 1774 or 1775, after making his will.

From this chancery suit, and other data, it can be shown that John Townley married, as his first wife, Sarah Edmondson, daughter of James Edmondston and his wife Judith (Alleman) Parr, widow of Philip Parr of Essex County. By Parr, Judith had a daughter, Judith Parr, who married John Dyke (alias Dike) who was the son of John Dyke by his wife Mary Sharpe. Recall that Mary was the sister of Ann Sharpe who married Vincent Vass who died in Essex County in 1727.

John Townley, who married Sarah Edmondston, was the grandson of John Townley of King and Queen, who patented 1,100 acres in King and Queen on what is now Burnt Mill Creek. This John Townley, the elder, was a brother to Lawrence Townley, who married Sarah Warner of Gloucester, daughter of Augustine Warner. Sarah's brother was Augustine Warner who married Mildred Reade of Gloucester. Their daughter, Mildred Warner, married Lawrence Washington. Their son, Augustine Washington, married as one of his wives, Mary Ball, and they were the parents of President George Washington. Augustine Washington, son of Lawrence, had a sister, Mildred Washington who married, as her first husband, John Lewis of Poropotank Creek, King and Queen. She married secondly Col. Roger Gregory, and thirdly. Col. Henry Willis. It was Col. Roger Gregory's sister, Ann Gregory that married Thomas Smith, the father of Elizabeth Smith, who married Thomas Foster.

Besides his involvement in the Middlesex County chancery suit against Shackelford, Thomas Vass was also involved with another Middlesex County proceeding. At August court 1784, there is reference to the case of *Thomas Vass executor of Humphrey Watkins vs. Harry Beverley Yates* for debt. In it, an attachment was awarded against the estate of the defendant for £1,300 paper money. Some time later, at March court 1786, there is a reference in the order books to the case of *Thomas Vass executor of Humphrey Watkins (?executor) of John Thurston, plaintiff, vs. Harry Beverley Yates, defendant*. As to Humphrey Watkins, it is proved that he married Elizabeth Thurston on 2 Dec 1770 in Middlesex. Harry Beverley Yates, mentioned in this suit, was the son of Rev. Bartholomew Yates of Middlesex County whose wife was Elizabeth Stanard, daughter of William Stanard (b. 15 Feb 1682, d. 3 Dec 1732) and his wife Elizabeth Beverley, daughter of Harry Beverley. Harry Beverley married Jane Montague (b. ca. 1767) on 27 Feb 1783 in Middlesex County. Jane was the daughter of Col. James Montague of Middlesex (b. 18 Feb 1741) and his wife Mary Elizabeth Chinn. Col. James was the son of William Montague by his wife Jane Price. After the death of her husband, Jane (Price) Montague married, secondly, Vincent Vass Sr., the marriage taking place in Middlesex County 7 Aug 1757 (bond).

Jane Price provides yet another connection back to the Vass line. She was the daughter of John Price of Middlesex (b. 29 Jan 1672, will proved 30 Sep 1726) who married 1 May 1705 to Jane Smith. Interestingly, this Jane Smith was the sister of Thomas Smith who married Ann Gregory. It was their daughter, Elizabeth Smith, who married Thomas Foster. Of further note is the fact that William Montague, who married Jane Price, was the son of Peter Montague of Middlesex, whose wife was Elizabeth Merry. Following the death of her husband, Peter Montague, Elizabeth married, secondly, Rice Curtis. As we have already seen, Rice and Elizabeth were the parents of a son, Rice Curtis, who married Martha Thacker. Their daughter, Mary Curtis, married Philip Vincent Vass, son of John Vass who died in Essex in 1755. So, even with the loss of a great many records, especially in King and Queen, it can still be seen that the Vass family was widely connected to a number of prominent families from that part of Virginia.

Reverend Thomas Vass of Granville County, North Carolina

The Thomas Vass mentioned in the King and Queen records above is almost certainly the same man who became a prominent Baptist preacher in North Carolina in the late 1700s and early 1800s, where he served for many years as pastor of Grassy Creek Baptist Church in Granville County, North Carolina, near the present-day town of Oxford.

If so, it seems that Thomas left the “established church” of England some time after 1771, and became one of a growing number of converts to the rapidly spreading Baptist denomination. The record amply demonstrates that in the 1770s, there was a major religious revival in several Virginia counties including King and Queen, Caroline, Spotsylvania, Orange, and Fauquier. The leaders of this revival were Baptist ministers such as John Waller of Spotsylvania, Reuben Pickett of Fauquier, and Robert Ware of King and Queen. Pickett was later associated with Reverend Vass in North Carolina. Stern measures were taken against the Baptists to discourage their breaking-away from the established church, including jailing. Even so, large numbers of people were attracted to these denominations, and Thomas Vass was doubtless one of them.

There was a close relationship between the Robert Ware mentioned above and the Vass family. For example, we have already encountered Ware’s name in our discussion of the Middlesex County chancery suit, *Vass vs. Shackelford*, which mentions a deposition by Robert Ware. Moreover, Henry Vass and Jane Ware were witnesses to the will of Robert Ware on 24 Nov 1780.

Warner, in his *Hoskins of Virginia and Related Families*, mentions Ware in a quotation taken from Robert Lynch Montague's *Sketch of the History of Glebe Landing Church*. This church stands today along side Rt. 17 in Middlesex County, just below the line with Essex County. The quotation from Warner reads as follows:

In 1771 James Mackan, a convert of Greenwood, waiting for baptism, presented to the county court of Middlesex a petition asking that his home in Middlesex be licensed as a place of worship for Protestant dissenters, in compliance with the act of religious toleration of 1st William and Mary. His petition was denied.

Upon what was probably a prearranged plan, on August 10, 1771, John Waller, who had suffered persecution in his own county of Spotsylvania and other counties, and William Webber who had just been released from imprisonment in Chesterfield County for preaching, arrived at the house of James Mackan in Middlesex County, Virginia. The adherents of the Established Church were awaiting their arrival, since he knew of their coming, and determined to take measures to squelch and nip their preaching in the bud. To accomplish this, they had John Waller, Robert Ware, James Greenwood, William Webber, and Richard and Thomas Wafer arrested, charging them with being present at the house of James Mackan, and that they "met together under the pretense of the exercise of religion, in other manner than according to the liturgy and the practice of the Church of England."---Semple says, in his *History of Virginia Baptists*, that, "they were confined in jail at Urbanna forty-six days, thirty days in close confinement and sixteen days in prison bounds."

Tradition says they refused to give bonds and it is undisputed that they preached from the jail to enormous and sympathetic crowds; that their unjust imprisonment aroused the righteous indignation of the people of the county, and their accusers gladly opened the jail doors and let them go free without bonds---and no record was made of their discharge. Robert Baylor Semple in his history of the Baptists stated that Glebe Landing was established on October 17, 1772. Semple makes Wares (Church), which was then known as Lower King and Queen Church, constituted the same day, but he adds that Wares was constituted first. If this be so, Wares was constituted in the morning and Glebe Landing in the evening---This makes Wares Church the oldest church in the Rappahannock Association and Glebe Landing second. However, when Glebe Landing was constituted William Mullen was ordained its first pastor and James Greenwood lay elder, but (Robert) Ware, who was the first pastor of Wares, was not ordained pastor of Wares until the 11th of February, 1773. So I take it that Wares was constituted first, but that Glebe Landing (Middlesex County) became an active church prior to Wares.

The *William and Mary Quarterly* contains additional detail on this incident, including the names of those seeking to "establish a place of publick (sic) worship, 1771, June." They included Robert Ware, James Mackan, John Owen, George Warwick, Edward Ware, Charles Mederis, John Warwick, John Greenwood, John Meacham, Jeremiah Shepard, Henry Shepard, and William Mullins. Also contained is a list of those who signed a petition praying for the release of these Baptist ministers. They included (?Jeremiah) Shepard, John Sadler, Richard Street, Abraham Montague, Henry Street, James Mackan, Williamson Bryent, John Bryent, John Warwick, George Warwick, George Warwick, Edward

Ware Sen., John Owen, James Ware, Thomas Mackan, James Mackan Sen., Matthew Mackan, Charles Mederis, John Abbott, Wm. Mullens, James Lee, Edward Ware, Ralph Watts, Jeremiah Shepard, Philip Vass, Henry Shepard, John Greenwood, (Latane) Montague, and William Owens.

One of those signing the petition, which is dated 19 Sep 1771, was Philip Vass, suggesting he was at least in favor of freeing the imprisoned men. Even so, there is evidence a number of members of the Vass line of Essex still backed the established church as late as 22 Oct 1779, the date of a petition signed by those still supporting this church. Among those signing this petition, on file at the Virginia State Library, are Philip Vass, William Vass, and John Vass.

There is a history of Grassy Creek Church published in 1880 by one of its ministers, Reverend Robert Devin. Called *A History of Grassy Creek Baptist Church, From Its Foundations to 1880 with Biographical Sketches of Its Pastors and Ministers*, it provides some information on the church's early ministers, including Thomas Vass. Devin himself was pastor of the church for nearly 30 years beginning in 1846, and was still serving as pastor when he wrote his history of the church and its ministers. Maloy Huggins, in his *History of North Carolina Baptists, 1727-1932*, says that Grassy Creek was established about 1756, and was probably the ninth or tenth Baptist Church to be established in the state. From 1758 to 1770, the church was a member of the so-called Sandy Creek Association and, according to Huggins, in those days had a building second to none in the state and perhaps the largest membership of any. Huggins continues:

In 1770 the Sandy Creek Association met at Grassy Creek. A division arose because those in the Grassy Creek area though the association was trying to lord it over the churches which wished to retain their independence . . . after fasting, prayer, and deliberation for some three days, no agreement was reached, but a proposal prevailed that the Sandy Creek Association be retained in North Carolina, that the Congaree be formed in South Carolina, and that the Virginia churches be formed as the Rapidan Association, usually called the General Association of Separate Baptists in Virginia. From 1770 to 1778, the Grassy Creek Church was associated with the Baptists in the Middle District of Virginia, and from 1788 to 1794 with the Roanoke in Virginia. When in 1794 the Flat River Association was formed, the Grassy Creek became a member of it . . . the Roanoke embraced three or more counties in Virginia, and Granville, Person, Caswell, Rockingham, and other counties in North Carolina.

The Roanoke Association was formed in 1788. It was divided into a number of districts including the Middle District which covered a very large geographical area. Charles F. Leek, in his *History of Pittsylvania Baptist Association, 1788-1963*, notes that, when this Middle District met at Nottoway meeting house in May 1787, it was determined that the association was "too large to assemble in one body . . . Accordingly, when they met at Mossingsford, in Charlotte County on 10 May 1788, they

agreed to divide into two districts” as originally planned in 1784. They called the new association “The Roanoke Association,” a name it retained until 1924, when it became “The Pittsylvania Association.”

There are some minutes from a meeting at Flat River Church in Person County, North Carolina, that refer to a meeting held in September 1788, not long after the Roanoke association was formed. These minutes contain the following:

Septembr meeting 1st Satdy 1788. Met with the assistance of brethren Rucks, Vass and Marshall, had a great deal of debating and appearance in the church, but as the day drew towards a close matters seem'd more hopefull and the brethren appeared more condescending, Sunday Brethren Rucks, Marshall and Vass all preached, and some good effect among the people took place especially the latter.

Subsequently, there was a meeting of the Association held at Grassy Creek Church. It began on Saturday, 16 May 1789. According to Leek, letters were read at the meeting from twenty-one churches brought to the meeting by forty-eight messengers, all men, including pastors. Grassy Creek was represented by Thomas Vass, Thomas Owen, Samuel Allen, and Charles Harvey. Adverse reports had reached the Association regarding two churches, Tarr River and Deep Run, which were considered part of its fellowship. The Association minutes record that:

Messrs. Reece, Pickett, Vass, Roberts, and Rucks, being appointed by the last Association . . . to wait upon Tarr River Church, report they attended agreeable to appointment, but were disappointed in restoring peace and harmony—the unity of the Spirit and bond of peace being very desirable, and believing there are many precious souls in said church in spiritual distress, therefore are induced . . . to appoint the same brethren . . . with Henry Lester to wait on them again. . .

The records of this 1789 meeting say that Sunday, May 17th, was given over wholly to preaching, and this began a tradition of having each annual Association meeting embrace the Lord's Day with preaching. The Association records show that Thomas Vass was Clerk of the Association meeting held in June 1791, and again in May of 1793. He last appears in the Association records as a preacher at the annual meeting held at Strawberry Church on Oct 1814.

In his book, Devin says that on the 4th Saturday in Nov 1793, elder Thomas Vass was chosen pastor of Grassy Creek, and continued to serve until 1805, when he resigned and moved to Stokes County, North Carolina with some of his children. Then, Reuben Pickett served until Oct 1808, when elder Thomas Vass was recalled to the pastorate. He served until 1814, when he retired. About 1818, being more than eighty years old, he died and his body was interred in the family burying ground near Moun-

tain Creek Church in Granville County. If Vass became pastor of Grassy Creek in 1793, this was certainly after he was already playing a prominent role in the Roanoke Association. Incidentally, his sons, Vincent and Philip Vass also moved to Stokes, as did his daughters, Elizabeth Crenshaw, and Lydia (Vass) Waggoner, wife of Lewis Wagoner of Stokes. His deceased daughter's husband, Stephen Frazier, and his children were also part of the group.

In 1808, Reverend Vass returned to Granville County when he was recalled to be pastor of Grassy Creek Church. By 1812, he was married to his third wife, Lucretia (Vinson) COOKE, who was the widow of Edward Cooke. By 1813, he was in declining health, prompting him to write his will. He must have died in 1817 as his will was entered for probate at the February Court of Granville County, 1818.

Devin notes he was able to find only a few bits of information on the history of Rev. Vass prior to his coming to North Carolina. He does say Vass was born in King and Queen County, Virginia in 1738, and entered the ministry before he came to North Carolina. It seems he had some connection with Meherrin Baptist Church in Virginia because his name appears in that church's minutes. This would be old Meherrin Baptist which was located in Lunenburg County, although its membership also included individual who lived in nearby Charlotte and Mecklenburg counties. A copy of the church's minute book for the years 1771-1884 can be found in the Virginia State Library. They mention his name in 1792, 1793, and 1800. For example, they note that at a meeting held in Dec 1792, Elder Vass gave a sermon. Interestingly, the minutes of 29 Apr 1792 make reference to a meeting to be held at Vasses (sic) meeting house "next Saturday the 2nd," but its location is unknown.

Devin also states that Thomas Vass had been married twice and that his first wife was the mother of all his children. Another source, *Biographical History of North Carolina*, also states that Thomas Vass was born in King and Queen County, Virginia about 1738, and reiterates the claim that Vass married in King and Queen a daughter of Thomas Foster, by whom he had four children: John, Vincent, Frances (?Fanny), and Thomas Jr., and similar information is also given by his grandson, William Worrall Vass, a prominent figure in the early history of railroading in North Carolina. If Thomas' first marriage to a daughter of Thomas Foster was a short one, it is entirely possible Devin was unaware of it, and so considered his marriage to Sarah Shepherd to be Thomas' first marriage.

The second wife of Thomas Vass was Sarah Shepherd, daughter of Samuel Shepherd and his wife Mildred Crockford of King and Queen. There is North Carolina deed of 17 Nov 1786 in which a Charles Breedlove sells two-hundred acres of land, in the corner of what is now Person County, North Carolina, to Phillip Vass. Witnesses to the deed were Thomas and Sarah Vass. Also recall the May 1791 Middlesex County chancery proceeding which involved a Thomas Vass and his wife Sarah.

These records too likely pertain to Rev. Thomas Vass and his wife Sarah Shepherd. Further evidence that Rev. Thomas married Sarah Shepherd is the fact that one of his grandsons was named Samuel Shepherd Smith. When Sarah Vass died is not clear, but it was likely after May 1791 and before the 1800 census was taken. That census shows one male age 16-25 and one female age 16-25 living with him.

About 1811, Thomas married Lucretia Cooke, the widow of Edward Cooke of Franklin County, Virginia. Lucretia, called "Cresey," was the daughter of David Vinson. There are a number of records dealing with the probate of David Vinson's estate. Lucretia's husband died about 1810. It appears she was much younger than Thomas Vass, her last husband. So, from various records, including the administration of his estate, it is believed that Rev. Thomas Vass had the following children: Thomas Vass Jr. (26 Nov 1777 – 19 Jul 1857), Reuben Vass, John Vass, Philip Vass, and Vincent, as well as daughters Lydia Vass, Rhoda Vass, Elizabeth Vass, Ann Vass (called Nancy), Mary Vass, Fanny Vass, and Sarah Vass.

The will of Thomas Vass is dated 2 Jun 1813 and was proved in Granville County at February Court 1818. In it, he wills to his children: all they have had from him as they worked hard to raise it, and they to equally divide all I have left, with Mary Frazier's two children, Thomas and Fanny, getting her share, she being deced, and son Thomas to return to the estate the £40 he owes. The will also notes that is 50 acres of land in Franklin County that belongs to my wife out of her father's estate; also money in Thomas Cooke's hands, as I made him atty to sell this land as the Franklin records will show, and all that is to be (considered) a part of the estate." A codicil was added on 15 Jan 1816, and was proved on the oath of Joseph Hart and Benjamin Hester, who were the witnesses. Bond in the amount of £5,000 was entered by Charles Smith as administrator of the estate suggesting the estate was of some value.

Receipts found in the file of papers concerning the probate of his estate include those signed by his children and heirs: Charles Smith, 1 Dec. 1817; John Vass, 15 Dec. 1819; Charles Crenshaw, 6 May 1820 and 24 Mar. 1821; William Hester for Robert Hester, 6 May 1820; Philip Vass, 12 Feb. 1820 and 18 Sept. 1820; Fanny Frazier, 10 Feb. 1821; Vincent Vass, 24 Mar. 1821; Reuben Vass, 4 May 1821; Thos. Frazier, 28 Aug. 1821; Robert Hester, 5 Sept. 1821; Lewis Waggoner, 14 Jan. 1822; John Vass, 22 Mar. 1822; John Hart (date cut off the original copy).

There is also an inventory of the sale conducted on 16 and 17 Feb 1818 as part of the settlement of his estate. Buyers included Reuben Vass, Groves Hunt, James Noel, Thomas Vass, Fleming Beasley, Susley Gilliam, John Vass, Charles Crenshaw, Alfred Hester, James Knott, Sr., David Smith, Daniel Tucker, Robert Hester, Benjamin Hester, Zachariah Hester, Thomas Knott, Joseph Hart, James Phil-

pott, Samuel ?Bonwit, Anderson Pettiford, Ezekiel Huddleston, John Hart, Peter Anderson, Ephraim Frazier, John Frazier, Larkin Currie, William Elliott, William Traylor, Thomas Howell, Judah Canton, Andrew Badgett, James Cooper, William Sneed, Mary Hester, William Hester, James Hunt, Barnard Howard, Samuel Hunt, Robert Huddleston, and John Howell. This was signed by Charles Smith.

The estate settlement dragged on for several years and as late as 1 Jul 1829 was still in progress, as evidenced by a receipt showing payments to the following legatees: Philip Vass, Charles Crenshaw, Wm Hester, John Hart, Fanny Frazier, Vincent Vass, Lucretia Vass, Reuben Vass, Thomas Frazier, Robert Hester (husband of Sally), Lewis Waggoner (husband of Lydia), and John Vass. This too was signed by Charles Smith as administrator.

There is a very sad story that involves Thomas' daughter, Lydia, who married Lewis Waggoner of Stokes County, North Carolina—the part that became Forsyth County in 1849. The Stokes marriage bond is dated 5 mar 1808. It turns out she was killed by a family slave. Lewis was the son of Samuel Waggoner who was born 20 Sep 1720 in Essex County, Virginia, according to a Bible record. Samuel Waggoner was one of the famous Regulators in the years leading up to the Revolutionary War.

The details of her murder were found some time ago in the old Lewis Waggoner family Bible that had descended in the Cofer family. The story, supposedly written by Lewis Waggoner himself, is entitled “An account of the melancholy death of Mrs. Lidia Waggoner given in Evidence on Trial by her Husband Mr. Lewis Waggoner.” The account reads as follows:

Sometime previous to the 22nd day of April AD 1819 Mr. Joseph Ham had contracted with me for a Cow and on that morning accompanied by Basil Carmichael came to my house on that business; my wife desired me to take care of our youngest Child untill she would milk the Cows.

Our other Children having been previously sent to school after she was gone, the above mentioned persons an myself agreed to go to the still house, about a quarter of a mile dista (page torn) the dwelling house, in a south direction, and as we p (page torn) Still house my wife was in the Cowpen which was the last . . . saw her, while living, we left negro Sol or Solomon in the yard Gering a beast to plow &C ., in the space of half an hour we return and stepping into the house with the Child in my arms the men a few yards behind, Called for my wife but Received no answer turning to go out saw my wife lying on the bed where she would Lay in the day time, I went to her supposing she had been taken with a sick or fainting fit, with which at times she was afflicted I Called to her, raised her up, but finding her E . . . I became alarmed, laid her down, told the men who . . . the door that something extraordinary was the matter

They came in and we raised her up and the blood gushed out of her mouth . . . when Joseph Ham said your wife is dead. She is murdered, and immediately enquired where Sol. was. I told him he was plowing and desired him to Call him whereupon Basil Carmichael went towards him and Called him, he being about 40 rod distant from the house North he accordingly came to the house. I asked him how his mistress was murdered he denied knowing anything about it. I then asked if he saw any person pass the house in our absence, he replied he saw no one pass, when

Joseph Ham pointing to his pantaloons, which were bloody, asked how that blood Came there, he said he received it from a pig, I then Charged him with the murder (previously having had no suspicion of him) which he still denied I then had him tied the Coroner sent for, and a jury of (torn) sworn, Both Coroner and Jury, were particular to Examine every (torn) ce of the fact and after due consideration, brought in a (torn) wilful murder Sol Confessed the fact, was tried at October . . . the Court held for the County of Stokes, found guilty and (hanged) on the 12th day of November AD 1819.

Mrs. Lidia Waggoner was descended of reputable parents her Father. The Revd. Mr. Thomas Vass was an approved preacher of the gospel in the Baptist Church. She uniformly through life supported an unblemished character, was surrounded with peace and plenty in her family beloved and respect ed by her neighbours and acquaintances who unanimously Expressed their sorrow for her untimely death and continue to simpasthise with her afflicted Husband and Children for their iretrevable loss. June 11th AD 1820 By Milton Campbell

In March 2012, several new findings came to light related to this case. First, an examination of the Superior Court Book for Stokes County for Thursday, 21 Oct 1819, found at the North Carolina State Archives, revealed a case called *The State of North Carolina vs. Negro Solomon*. It stated that the jury in the case found the defendant “guilty of the felony murder in manner and form as charged in the Bill of Indictment,” and then the court adjourned. The next day, in the same case, it was noted that the prisoner Negro Solomon “being brought to the Bar and showing no cause why sentence of death should be (carried out) against him. It was ordered by the Court that the said negro Solomon, the prisoner at the Bar be remanded to the Prison of this County (Stokes) and safe keeping until Friday the 12th day of November next. That between the hours of 12 and 4 o’clock of that day, he the said negro, Solomon be taken from there to the Public Gallows of Stokes County and then and there be hung by the neck until he be dead and that the sheriff of Stokes County execute this sentence according.”

After this case was discovered, it was also found that in the North Carolina General Assembly records for November-December, 1821 (Box 3, house Committee Reports of Claims) there was a claim made by Lewis Waggoner of Stokes County. According to the record, Waggoner’s wife “was killed by a slave on 22 Apr 1819, leaving him to care for five small children.” It seems that after the death of his wife, Lewis Waggoner asked the General Assembly for relief, pleading that the slave Solomon was his only one and asking for compensation for his loss. After deliberation, it seems the General Assembly declined to provide compensation.

Lewis Waggoner dated his will 27 Oct 1835, and it was proved at the June Term of the Stokes Court, 1838. It mentioned son-in-law Godfrey Odum, and children Spencer, Joseph, Sally (wife of Benjamin Cofer), and Delphia. The executor was Salathiel Stone and witnesses were J.C. and Salathiel Stone. The Stokes County marriage records show that Godfrey Odum married Milly Waggoner on 16

Jul 1834 (date of bond), while Benjamin Cofer married Sally Waggoner on 24 Jun 1830. A Thomas Spencer Waggoner married Isabella Miller in Stokes on 16 Jan 1840, and Joseph Waggoner married Elizabeth Crews on 16 Sep 1840. There is no record in Stokes of the marriage of a Delphia Waggoner. According to Forsyth County vital records, Spencer C. Waggoner was born 1 Nov 1912, the son of Thomas Spencer Waggoner and Eve Jeanette Barnwell, who were married in Forsyth County on 20 Nov 1896. Thomas Spencer Waggoner died in Walkertown, Forsyth County, North Carolina on 4 May 1937 and is buried at Loves United Methodist Church there. According to his death certificate, Thomas Spencer Waggoner was the son of Reuben Voss Waggoner (18 May 1845 - 15 Aug 1923) who married Sarah A. Smith. Reuben Voss Waggoner was the son of Thomas Spencer Waggoner and Isabella Miller.

Edward Voss, alias Vass

There was another man in King and Queen, County, Virginia in the 1760s that may also be connected with the Vincent Vass line there and in neighboring Essex County. He was called Edward Voss or Vass—in some records, his name appears as Voss, but in many others records as Vass. In the discussion here, his name will generally be spelled as it appears in the particular record being discussed, otherwise as Voss.

Edward Voss first shows up in King and Queen, County in 1762, when he placed an advertisement in the 12 Feb 1762 issue of the *Virginia Gazette*. In it, he sought the return of a slave who ran away from him in King and Queen. The slave was described as six feet two inches high and 24 or 25 years of age, and it was noted that he formerly belonged to Mr. John Tatum of Norfolk County, Virginia. Given that Voss was almost surely of age in 1762 (i.e., twenty-one years, or older), he must have been born no later than 1741, and probably before that. A date of birth in the 1730s would not seem unreasonable for him. If so, this would make him a contemporary of Thomas Vass (b. ca. 1738) and children of John Vass Sr. of Essex County.

Two years after the foregoing advertisement appeared, Voss placed another one, again seeking the return of runaway servants. It was published in the 29 Nov 1764 issue of *The Pennsylvania Gazette*:

RUN away from the Subscriber, in King and Queen, Virginia, two white indented Servants, a Man and his Wife. The Man is English, about 5 Feet 5 Inches high, of a red Complexion, wears his Hair, is much Sun-burnt, steps short and quick in his Walk, is a Brickmaker by Trade, and has a sett of Shoemaker's Tools; had a short red Coat, red Breeches with Metal Buttons, an old green lappelled jacket, a Flannel Jacket with red Stripes, new Osenbrigs Trowsers, with other Clothes, as he stole Part of mine; his Name is James Marrington. His Wife is about 30 Years of

Age, about 5 Feet high, very thick, looks well, and has got good Clothes; she is an Irish Woman, and her Name is Mary Marrington.

Run away likewise 4 Negroes, viz. Jack, a black thick Fellow, about 30 Years old, about 5 Feet 6 Inches high, speaks broken English, has been used to go by Water, but of late to Plantation Business; had on a blue Cotton Jacket and Breeches, Petticoat Trowsers, Stockings, Shoes with Buckles, and has a Whitemetal Button in his Hat. Dick, a dark Mulattoe, very lusty, about 25 Years old, about 5 Feet 8 Inches high, a Carpenter and Painter by Trade; had on Cotton Clothes, with Petticoat Trowsers, and he has got a red Jacket and Breeches, a good Felt Hat, and Buckles in his Shoes. Daniel, a well set black Fellow, about 5 Feet 10 Inches high, has been used to Plantation Business, and had on Cotton Clothes. Dorcas, a small Wench, about 5 Feet high, has been used to House Business, has got a new brown Linen Jacket and Petticoat, and sundry other Things that she stole. They have all large Bundles, as they stole several Sheets and Blankets, with other Things. They were supposed to be seen crossing from Point Comfort to Little River, in a small Boat, with a Blanket Sail, last Saturday Morning, and I imagine will make for North-Carolina. Whoever apprehends the above Servants and Slaves, and delivers them to me, shall have Ten Pounds Reward, if taken in Virginia, if out thereof Twenty Pounds. EDWARD VOSS.

This same advertisement was run by Voss again in the *Pennsylvania Gazette* in an issue dated 7 Mar 1765. From these items, it appears nearly certain that Edward Voss lived for a while in King and Queen in the 1760s. It is also clear that several of his servants were trained in the building trades, which would make sense given that he was a brick mason and building contractor himself.

Edward Voss appears again in another advertisement in the *Virginia Gazette*; this one dated 18 Jul 1766. It was an announcement of the sale of a plantation in King and Queen, which may have been his residence at the time. As will be discussed, in later years this plantation situated along the north shore of the Mattaponi River came to be called “Melrose.” This advertisement, which is headlined “Norfolk, June 14, 1766,” reads as follows:

To be sold, a tract of land containing 1000 Acres, formerly the Property of Col. Philip Johnson, lying in King and Queen County, among which is near 100 Acres of wild Oats Marsh, capable of supporting 2 or 300 Head of Cattle; there is as much Land cleared as will employ 9 or 10 Hands, and the rest is well Timber'd. It is pleasantly situated on Mattaponi River, and has on it the following Improvements, viz, A Two Story Brick House, consisting of Four Rooms on a Floor, and all other convenient Out-Houses. A great Plenty of Fish may at all Times be caught near the Landing.

Any Person inclinable to purchase, may know the Terms by applying to Col. George Brooke in King and Queen, or to the Subscriber. Signed EDWARD VOSS.

The “Norfolk” headline for this advertisement is interesting because there was an Edward Voss who was in the Norfolk Virginia area in 1766. This information comes from a book by William S. Forrest called *Historical and Descriptive Sketches of Norfolk and Vicinity*. It recites that there was a

group of men that met in Norfolk on 31 May 1766 to protest against the Stamp Act imposed in 1765 by the British Parliament on the American colonies. Those present organized an association called “The Sons of Liberty.” Among those signing the resolutions was one Edward Voss. Whether he is the same man as the Edward Voss who placed the advertisement for the sale of “Melrose” cannot be determined from the available evidence, but it seems a possibility. It is possible he was in Norfolk at the time as part of a construction job there.

The Col. Philip Johnson mentioned in the advertisement as a past owner of “Melrose” was from a prominent Virginia family, and served as a member of the House of Burgesses for King and Queen for the years 1752-55 and 1756-58. He was also a Burgess, along with Lewis Burwell, for James City County from 3 Nov 1761 until 1 May 1765. His wife was Elizabeth Bray. She was the daughter Col. Thomas Bray of “Littleton,” James City County, Virginia, and his wife, Elizabeth Meriwether, daughter of Col. Nicholas Meriwether.⁷³ Philip and Elizabeth (Bray) Johnson were married in 1743. Their children were James Bray Johnson, who died in 1779; William Johnson; Elizabeth Johnson, who received £500 when twenty one years old from the estate of her grandfather; Thomas Johnson; Rebecca Johnson, not married in 1783; and Martha and Anne Johnson. Upon the death of Col. Thomas Bray, his land in and around Williamsburg, Virginia, that had been entailed to his daughter, Elizabeth, came into the possession of Col. Philip Johnson as her husband. Given that he was a Burgess from King and Queen, Johnson probably utilized his wife’s property when the House of Burgesses was in session. He probably also used “Melrose” in King and Queen, at least while he was Burgess for that county. Since Johnson became a Burgess from James City County for the session of 3 Nov 1761, he may have disposed of the “Melrose” property by this date, but this is not certain.

It is not clear when, or how, Edward Voss came into the possession of “Melrose.” Indeed, it is not actually clear whether he owned it, or whether the legal title was in Col. George Brooke who was named in the 1766 *Virginia Gazette* advertisement along with Voss. Regardless, it seems the property

⁷³ It is interesting to note that *The Virginia Magazine of Genealogy* contains a list of tithables of Surry County, Virginia from the 1670s. One list, taken by Nicholas Meriwether and dated 1 Jun 1674, contains the name Henry Vaus (sic). Another list, also taken by Nicholas Meriwether and dated 10 Jun 1675, contains the name Henry Vass (sic) with the name Thomas Watson written as his "mate." Nicholas Meriwether, born ca. 1631, settled first in Surry County. His brother, Francis Meriwether, died before 28 Mar 1666, when administration of his Surry County estate was granted to Nicholas Meriwether. Nicholas Meriwether and his wife Elizabeth had a son, Francis Meriwether, who settled in Essex County, Virginia. He married Mary Bathhurst of New Kent County, Virginia. They had a son, Thomas Meriwether, of Essex County, who married Susanna whose maiden name was possibly Skelton. Francis Meriwether, son of Nicholas, lived in South Farnham Parish, Essex County, at a house on the Rappahannock River called "Bathhurst." *Virginia Colonial Abstracts*, Lancaster County, Series ii, vol. ii, p. 96, mentions a Henry Vause who appears in the Lancaster court records in 1672. Whether he could be the Henry mentioned in the Surry County list of taxables is not known. See *Genealogies of Virginia Families* from Tyler’s *Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine*.

did not sell as the result of the 1766 advertisement and it was offered again in 1769, this time by auction, according to another advertisement placed in the *Virginia Gazette* of 19 Jan 1769:

To be sold Tuesday the 16th of February next, if fair, if not the next fair day, on the premises to the highest bidder near one thousand acres of land pleasantly situated on the Mattaponi River in King and Queen County; in good order for cropping with the following improvements: a two story brick house with four rooms on a floor; all necessary houses; a large apple orchard; a good fishery and a large wild oat march (sic) with the stock and fodder.

So what else is known about the history of the property called “Melrose?” The truthful answer is not very much at all. However, some of what can be gleaned from the meager records still available is discussed in the following paragraphs. First, according to Malcolm Hart Harris, it is believed that the plantation originally belonged to Chichley Corbin Thacker, as a 1,000 acre property appears under his name in the 1704 rent roll for King and Queen County. Thacker was clerk of the court of King and Queen until his death about 1730. There is no evidence that Chichley Corbin Thacker ever married, or had issue. Consequently, his estate was administered by his brother, Edwin Thacker, of Middlesex County, who placed an advertisement in the 10 Jun 1737 issue of the *Virginia Gazette* offering the plantation for lease:

To be Lett by the Subscriber on reasonable terms a large brick house in King and Queen County about 3 miles below the courthouse and with any quantity of land that shall be desired under 1000 acres.

From the advertisement, it seems that Col. Philip Johnson might have acquired and then disposed of “Melrose” some time between 10 Jun 1737 and 14 Jun 1766, and that it fell into the possession of either Edward Voss or Col. George Brooke. But how did Col. Philip Johnson gain title to “Melrose?” There is insufficient information to say. However, it is worth mentioning that there was a connection between the Johnson and Thacker families as follows. Col. Thomas Bray, who married Elizabeth Meriwether, had a brother, Maj. James Bray, who married in 1740 to Frances Thacker of Middlesex County. Frances was the daughter of Col. Edwin Thacker, who handled the administration of the estate of his brother, Chichley Corbin Thacker, so it is possible the property came to Philip Johnson via the Thacker/Bray/Johnson connection. It is also of interest to note that there are other relations here, and they all lead to the Robert Vaulx family of Virginia. First, when Maj. James Bray died, his widow, Frances (Thacker) Bray, married, as her second husband, Lewis Burwell of “Kingsmill,” James City, County, and we have already seen that the Burwell and Robert Vaulx families were closely associated

in early Virginia. Second, Maj. James Bray, who married Frances Thacker, was the son of James Bray (d. 1725) whose wife was Mourning Pettus. This James Bray had a sister, Ann Bray, whose first husband was Capt. Peter Temple, son of Rev. Peter Temple whom we have also encountered previously in connection with the Robert Vaulx (merchant of London and Virginia). For example, it was on 3 Dec 1690 that Robert Vaulx of London, merchant, executed a deed of lease and release to Peter Temple of London for 600 acres of land on Queen's Creek in York County known a "Vaulx land." Finally, there was an advertisement in the *Virginia Gazette* in 1777 that advertised that Philip Johnson's plantation in James City County, known as "Vaux Hall," and his plantations along the Chickahominy River were for sale—Johnson was having problems with creditors, and this prompted the sale of his properties. It seems Johnson had not lived in Williamsburg since about 1765, which is about the time of his wife's death, and it is likely he was residing at "Vaux Hall," or at another of his James City County properties.⁷⁴

So, it is possible that Col. Philip Johnson acquired "Melrose" through some connection between the Edwin Thacker family and the Bray family. Unfortunately, so many records have been lost that no exact accounting can be given of the ownership of the plantation from the time it belonged to Chichley Corbin Thacker until it came into the possession of Col. Philip Johnson.

Now, let us consider again the Edward Voss who is listed in the 1766 *Virginia Gazette* advertisement along with Col. George Brooke of King and Queen County. In fact, there was also a connection between the Brooke and Voss families, and that is discussed next, beginning with Robert Brooke of Essex County, Virginia, who was born in 1654 and died some time after 16 Dec 1712.⁷⁵ He was one of the "Gentleman Justices" of Essex from May 1692 until 1708. He married Catherine Booth (b. ca. 1664), daughter of Capt. Humphrey Booth of old Rappahannock County, Virginia. Robert and Catherine (Booth) Brooke had several children, including a son, Robert Brooke Jr. (the eldest son and heir at law); William Brooke; Humphrey Brooke Sr.; and Mary Brooke. Of these, Robert Brooke Jr. married Phoebe Sale (also seen as Saile in some records); William Brooke married Sarah Taliaferro; Humphrey Brooke Sr. married Elizabeth Braxton, daughter of Col. George Braxton Sr., of King and Queen County, Virginia; and Mary Brooke married, before 1713, Leonard Tarrant of Essex County, and died before Sep 1718, leaving a large estate. Leonard and Mary (Brooke) Tarrant had a daughter, Mary Tarrant, who married 23 Feb 1733 to the Rev. Robert Rose, and died 28 Feb 1738/1739. Rose was born at Wester Alvis, Scotland, 12 Feb 1704, and died at Richmond, Virginia, 30 Jun 1751. Rose served as

⁷⁴ See a discussion of Bassett Hall in Williamsburg, Virginia and Philip Johnson by Mary A. Stephenson, available online at <http://research.history.org/digitallibrary/view/index.cfm?doc=researchreports%5Crr1005.xml>.

⁷⁵ Most of the information here on the Brooke family comes from a series of articles in *The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* written by Professor St. George Tucker Brooke.

parson of St. Anne's Parish, Essex County from 1725 until 1748, and then at St. Anne's Parish in Albemarle County, Virginia from 1744 until 1751.⁷⁶

Humphrey Brooke Sr. lived in King William County where he was a Justice of the court. He had a joint patent for 5,000 acres of land at the "foot of the great mountains in the county of Spotsylvania," with his father-in-law, Col. George Braxton, his brother-in-law, George Braxton Jr., and his sons Paulin and George Brooke. Humphrey and Elizabeth (Braxton) Brooke Sr. had the following children: Paulin, born before 28 Sep 1728, died young and without issue; George; Robert; and Humphrey. Humphrey Brooke Sr., probably through the influence of his wife, lived in King William County on a tract of land called "Brickhouse." He was a merchant and in 1732 was named in the Commission of Justices for King William County. His death in 1737 left his wife and son George (later Col. George Brooke), an infant son, and perhaps other children.

Col. George Brooke (1732-1782) grew up in King William; however, he moved to King and Queen County after he bought a plantation there in 1764 called "Mantapike." He married Hannah Tunstall, daughter of Col. Richard Tunstall. His will, written in 1781, was proved at a court held in King and Queen on 13 May 1782. "Mantapike" was originally granted to Edward Digges on 18 Apr 1653. Title eventually passed to William Banks, who owned the plantation at the time of his death in 1709. From him, it passed to his son, Ralph Banks, who resided there until his death, whence the title passed to his son, William Banks, who was living there in 1742. He married Ann Tunstall, also a daughter of Col. Richard Tunstall. Then, some time prior to 1758, "Mantapike" passed to William's son, Tunstall Banks. It was he who sold the plantation in 1764 to Col. George Brooke.

Robert Brooke Jr., was Surveyor of Essex County and commissioned a Justice of the court in April 1727. He was also one of the "Knights of the Golden Horseshoe."⁷⁷ As noted above, he married Phoebe Sale and they lived at "Farmer's Hall," a 600 acres plantation patented by Brooke's father in 1704 near present-day Champlain, Virginia. It is said that the now-abandoned St. Matthew's Episcopal

⁷⁶ See the book by the Rev. Ralph Fall called *The Diary of Robert Rose: A View of Virginia by a Scottish Colonial Parson, 1746 – 1751*. Fall also discusses the Sale family, noting that it descends from William Saile who immigrated to Virginia before 1657 and died before 1704. His son, Cornelius Sale, married Mary Samuel of Caroline County, Virginia, and they lived in the present areas of Lloyds and Champlain in upper Essex County, Virginia. They had at least two children: Cornelius Sale II, who married in 1743 to Martha Jones, daughter of William Jones of Essex; and Anthony Sale who died ca. 1762.

⁷⁷ In 1710, acting royal governor of Virginia, Alexander Spotswood, led an expedition of men to explore the upper Rappahannock River valley to look for new lands to settle. The party left Germanna, Virginia on 29 Aug and returned 7 Sep of that year. The expedition crossed the Blue Ridge Mountains and rode down into the Shenandoah Valley, reaching the river there. After the journey, Spotswood gave each officer of the expedition a stickpin made of gold and shaped like a horseshoe on which he had inscribed the words in Latin "*Sic jurat transcendere montes*", which translates into English as "Thus he swears to cross the mountains." The horseshoes were encrusted with small stones and were small enough to be worn from a watch chain. The members of Governor Spotswood's expedition soon became popularly known as the "Knights of the Golden Horseshoe."

Church—a chapel of ease of St. Anne’s Parish in upper Essex County—was built in 1860 on the site of “Farmer’s Hall.” This area was also the site of another colonial church—the lower church of St. Anne’s Parish—which is still referred to as Sales Church after the family of that name who lived in that vicinity.

Robert Brooke Jr. and his wife, Phoebe, had several children. They included Robert Brooke who married Mary Fautleroy; William Brooke; Humphrey Brooke; Richard Brooke; Katherine or Catherine Brooke; Susanna or Susannah Brooke; Mary or Molly Brooke; and Elizabeth Brooke.

Robert Brooke Jr. wrote his will 5 Apr 1736 and delivered it to Rev. Robert Rose who produced it in Essex County court on 19 Mar 1744/45. His brother, Humphrey Brooke, was his executor along with the Rev. Robert Rose, Col. William Beverley, and Doctor Mungo Roy.⁷⁸ The will named guardians for his eldest son, Robert, until he attained the age of 21, for son William, and for his two youngest sons, Richard and Humphrey Brooke. The will also devised £150 pounds to each of his four daughters listed in the following order in his will: Katherine also seen as Catherine in some records; Susanna; (Mary) Molley; and Elizabeth. He also left to his “loving wife” for her natural life, “all my personal estate.” From this it would seem that Phoebe (Sale) Brooke was still living in April 1736, when Robert penned his will; however, according to a diary kept by Rev. Robert Rose, Phoebe Brooke died 4 Oct 1748.⁷⁹

Some years later, there was a chancery suit that apparently involved the estate of Robert Brooke Jr. The book, *Ancestors and Descendants of the Brothers Rev. Robert Rose and Rev. Charles Rose of Colonial Virginia and Wester Alves Morayshire, Scotland*, by Catherine Rose, provides a history of the Rose family mentioned above. In it, there is an order of Essex court made 21 Mar 1764, in which the following wording appears:

John Vass adm. etc. of Elizabeth Vass deceased . . . Vass an infant by the said John Vass his father, Thomas Sale and Mary or Molly his wife and Catherine Rose widow, Complainants against John Robinson Esquire surviving Exr of William Beverley Esquire who was the surviving Exr of Robert Brooke Gent Dec'd John Rowzee Gent Admr of Susanna Rowzee Decd and Sarah Rowzee an Infant by the said John Rowzee her Guardian for this purpose appointed Defendants In Chancery. On the Defendants motion further time is given them till the Next court to file their Answer to the Complainants Bill.

From this, it would seem that Elizabeth Vass was deceased by 21 Mar 1764. An examination of the index to the Essex County order book that contains this order shows that it lists the case as “John

⁷⁸ Dr. Mungo Roy married Catherine Micou, daughter of John Micou and Catherine Walker, daughter of James Walker of Middlesex County. They lived in Caroline County, Virginia near the border with Essex.

⁷⁹ The date of death of Phoebe (Sale)Brook is given in *The Diary of Robert Rose* by the Rev. Ralph Fall.

Vass father of John Vass Jr.” A subsequent order of 22 Aug 1764 notes that the estate of Elizabeth Vass was administered by John Vass. The case is mentioned yet again in the Essex orders under the date 16 Apr 1765. In fact, there are several entries in the index to this order book written as follows: “Edward Vass *et al.* chancery against John Robinson,”; “Edward Vass vs. John Rowzee,” “Edward Vass vs. Sarah Rowzee,” and “Edward Vass vs. Catherine Rose.” Also, under this same date, the index contains this entry: “John Vass chancery against Robinson, Rowzee and Rose.” In the cases involving Edward Vass, the wording is nearly identical to that involving John Vass cited in the book on the Rose family, *viz.*:

Edward Vass adm. etc. of Elizabeth Vass deceased . . . Vass an infant by the said Edward his father, Thomas Sale and Milly his wife and Catherine Rose, widow vs. John Robinson Esquire surviving Exr of William Beverley who was surviving Exr of Robert Brooke deceased . . .

Moreover, in the index to this same order book (vol. 26) there is an entry of 19 Aug 1766 naming John Vass administrator of Elizabeth Vass. Then, on 16 Mar 1767, there is an entry in the case “John Vass chancery against Robinson, Rowzee and Rose” in which the court makes the following comment: “the order of court not being complied with Robert Beverley and Robert Brooke Gent. are appointed to sell the lands in dispute between the said parties according to a former decree of this court and that they return a report of the said proceedings to the court.” Later, in the case called “Edward Vass *et al.* vs. John Rowzee *et al.*,” the court offers essentially the same language: “The former order not being complied with for the sale of the land, by consent of the parties Robert Beverley, Robert Brooke and John Rose Gent. or any two of them are appointed to sell the said land agreeable to a sale decree of this court and divide the money as is therein directed . . .”

There is also another record that pertains to the probate of the estate of Robert Brooke Jr. In it, the Essex County records says, “At a court held for Essex county, June, 1767, the estate of the late (Major) Robert Brooke was divided, one –fourth to Mrs. Katherine Rose, one-fourth to Mrs. Susannah Rowzee, one-fourth to Mrs. Mollie Sale, and one fourth to Mrs. Elizabeth Voss.” It seems that at least some of the land in question in these cases was in Culpeper County, Virginia, since there is included among the deeds of Culpeper the following interesting entry under date 17 Nov 1768:

Robert Beverley, Esqr., and Robert Brooke of Essex County to Thomas Sale and Richd. Rouzie, Gent., of same. Robert Brooke, late of said country, Gent., was in his lifetime seized of one tract in the Great Fork of Rappahannock River adjoining the lands of William Beverley, Esqr., which was then reputed to contain 951 acres and did by his last will and testament 25 April 1736 directed the land to be sold by his executors for raising money for reach of his four daughters

Catharine, Susannah, Milly, Elizabeth. The tract had hitherto remained unsold. On motion made by Edward Voss who intermarried with Elizabeth, one of the daughters of the testator, the County court of Essex hath lately decreed that sale thereof should be made and directed their order in June court 1767 empowering Robert Beverley and Robert Brooke to make sale, and the land having been previously and sufficiently advertised in the *Virginia Gazette*⁸⁰ was publickly exposed in the court yard of the County of Culpeper on 24 Aug. 1767 and struck (sic: struck) off by the cryer to Thomas Sale and Richard Rouzie as the highest bidders in the sum of £254 current money.

This record clearly says that Elizabeth Brooke, daughter of Robert Jr., intermarried with Edward Voss. However, Malcolm Hart Harris has this to say about Edward Voss:

Edward Voss, also spelled Vass, was a grandson of Col. Robert Brooke of Essex County, and **his mother**, Elizabeth Brooke, had received a fourth share of Col. Brooke's estate. (emphasis added)

Put another way, Harris seems to say that Edward was the son of Elizabeth Brooke by a Mr. Voss or Vass. Professor St. George Tucker Brooke includes a copy of the will of Robert Brooke, oldest son of Robert Brooke, Jr., the "Knight of the Golden Horseshoe," in his discussion of the Brooke family of Essex County. This will was witnessed by John Scrosby, Edward Voss, Edwards Matthews, Merriday Brown, and John Matthews. In a note concerning the Edward Voss who was one of the witnesses, Professor Brooke has this comment:

This Edward Voss, spelled with an 'o,' must have been the testator's nephew, the son of his sister, Elizabeth, who married --- Voss."

From this it appears that Professor St. George Tucker Brooke did not know the name of the Mr. Voss whom he says married Elizabeth, and was the father of Edward Voss. In any case, these two authorities seem to say Edward was not the husband of Elizabeth (Brooke) Voss, daughter of Robert Brooke Jr., but her son. Given the Essex County court records mentioned above, this raises the question of whether her husband was the John Vass mentioned in the chancery cases discussed above. If so, who was this man, John Vass? Could he be the John Vass, son of John and Rachel (Pendleton) Vass mentioned earlier, or perhaps another John Vass altogether? Perhaps more research will help sort this out. Whatever the case, these various records clearly demonstrate that there was a close relation be-

⁸⁰ The following sales notice appears in the 26 Mar 1767 issue of the *Virginia Gazette*: "To be sold, at Culpeper court, on Thursday the 21st of June, pursuant to the will of Major Robert Brooke, deceased. Fourteen hundred and three acres of land, in the county of Culpeper, known by the name of Brooke's tract. Twelve months credit will be allowed, on giving bond and security to Robert Beverley and John Rose, trustees."

tween the Brooke family of Essex and the Edward Voss family, but they do not explain how “Melrose” came into the possession of Edward Voss and/or Col. George Brooke who, it seems, was the George Brooke who lived at “Mantapike,” in King and Queen County, the son of Humphrey Brooke Sr.

As has been previously noted, Edward Voss was a brick mason and builder by trade, and he later owned property in Fredericksburg, Virginia, in Spotsylvania County, including a brick yard.

The *Virginia Landmarks Register* contains an item on Little Fork Church in the Rixeyville vicinity of Culpeper County, built in 1774-76 by William Phillips for St. Mark’s Parish. The parish vestry records contain a note dated 17 Mar 1776 recording a payment of £5 to Edward Voss “for two plans of the brick Church.” So Voss must have been the designer of this small but beautiful colonial edifice.

Also of note is the fact that in March 1785, Edward Voss, of Culpeper, was contracted to lay one and a half million bricks on Shockoe Hill, high above the falls of the James River in Virginia’s capital city of Richmond. This was in connection with the construction of the original state capitol building in that city. There is a letter written to Thomas Jefferson, who was then Minister to France, and dated, Richmond, 20 Mar 1785. It seems Jefferson was involved in the plans for the new capitol building and, indeed, was responsible for helping develop its plans. The letter signed by James Buchanan, contains this paragraph:

We have already contracted with Edward Voss of Culpeper, for the laying of 1,500,000 bricks. He is a workman of the first reputation here, but skillful in plain and rubbed work alone. We suppose he may commence his undertaking by the beginning of August . . . This circumstance renders us anxious for expedition in fixing the plan; especially too as the foundation of the Capitol will silence the enemies of Richmond in the next October session.

Jefferson's immediate reply has been lost, but there are several letters from him to the directors which show his enthusiasm for the project. According to the *Calendar of State Papers of Virginia*, “Edward Voss contracted with the Directors, on May 11th, 1789, to build the columns of the portico, and the vaults under the portico, of Brick” . . . (and) “on July 1, following, the said Ed. Voss entered into bond with the Governor in the penalty of £1,500 for the faithful performance of his contract, with Wm. Duval, security.” There is a good deal of other information that relates to the contract with Voss to carry out part of the construction, but that will not be covered here.

As noted, Edward Voss had property in Fredericksburg, Virginia. According to Spotsylvania records, on 17 Jul 1772, Margaret Gordon, of Fredericksburg and Hugh Mercer and his wife, Isabella, conveyed property to Edward Vass of St. George Parish of Spotsylvania County. The deed recites that Margaret Gordon owned two lots in Fredericksburg, numbers 79 and 80, which she had purchased

from Fielding Lewis and his wife Betty. It also notes that John Mercer had purchased these lots from Margaret Gordon and title was in Mercer and his wife, Isabella. In any case, Mercer and his wife conveyed the lots to Vass. There is another deed of this same date indicating that Fielding and Betty Lewis had conveyed four lots in Fredericksburg to Edward Vass, “whereon the said Edward Vass’s bric (sic) yard is contiguous.” The Spotsylvania records also contained a deed of 17 Jul 1772 by which Edward Vass, William Smith and Ann his wife, conveyed to John Taliaferro of King George County two lots in Fredericksburg, numbers 252 and 262.

On 2 Sep 1777, Edward Vass and Jane, his wife, of Culpeper County, conveyed to James Somerville of Fredericksburg lot 275 in that town. As will be seen, Edward Vass Jr. married Jane Tunstall, so it is possible this conveyance pertained to him and not Edward Sr.

Edward Vass also had dealings with the Washington family and on 27 May 1779 he and others, for £1,000 pounds (probably paper money), conveyed to Charles Washington of Fredericksburg, Gentleman, two lots or half-acres of land (numbers 79 and 80) bounded by Caroline, Hawke, and Sophia Streets. Charles was a younger brother to George Washington and lived in the house that is known today as the “The Rising Sun Tavern,” located on Caroline Street.

Edward Voss owned considerable property in Culpepper (sic) County, Virginia, some of which he tried to sell in 1786 by placing an advertisement in the *Independent Gazette* of Philadelphia dated 26 Aug 1786. According to the information in the advertisement, the land was about thirty miles from Fredericksburg and consisted of “between 2 and 3000 acres of Land, about 1200 of which are cleared and under a good fence.” Some of the land was planted in “Timothy and other grass, and 2 or 300 acres of Meadow Land to clear.” On the premises were four separate orchards with an abundance of apple and peach trees. There was also a “Frame Dwelling-house, near 60 by 37 feet, four Rooms on a floor, with an 11 foot Passage (center hall), Cellars under it, a new Kitchen, built with stone, 50 by 32 feet, eight Rooms with fire places, Stable, and Granary, 96 by 35 feet, with Stalls for thirty horses, a Dairy, 16 feet square, and all other houses necessary for a large family, and four Tenements for small families on different parts of the tract.” Also included as part of the sale were “8 or 900 acres of Wood Land, on Summer Duck run, in the said county, within 3 or 4 miles of Stevensburgh⁸¹, and 35 miles from Fredericksburg.” The advertisement also included a description of other land that was part of the sale described as “500 acres in the county of Fauquier, on the road from Normandy ford to Falmouth, 18 miles from Fredericksburg.” Finally, Voss offered a “Merchant Mill, within 1 mile of the first mentioned tract, on Mountain run, with 53 acres of Land; the Mill-house 50 feet square, two par of Stones,

⁸¹ Stevensburgh is a small rural unincorporated community located at the intersection of Route 3 and Route 663 in Culpeper County, and is about 6.9 miles east of Culpeper.

two Boulting-cloths; a new Saw Mill and Hemp Mill.” He added that the “Mill-house has lately had a thorough repair.” According to the advertisement, those interested were encouraged to apply to Mr. John Strode and Mr. Robert Slaughter for terms, near the first tract, or to Voss “in Richmond.” From these details it seems that the house and other buildings were substantial structures and that the property was generally quite valuable.

Some ten years after this sale was advertised, the *Federal Gazette* of Baltimore, Maryland, carried another advertisement that included some of this Voss property. It was placed in the 9 Aug 1796 edition by Nicholas Voss and dated 5 Aug “Alexandria.” The property included several tracts described as follows. First, “A VALUABLE Farm in the county of Culpepper (sic), lying on Flat Run, containing six hundred and sixteen acres. Two hundred and twenty-five acres of which are cleared, (and) enclosed by a good fence, and in fine arable order.” Also for sale was “the reversion of 300 acres, joining said tract, whereon mr. (sic) Edward Voss now lives.” According to the advertisement, the property included “an elegant Dwelling House, 60 feet by 40; two-stories high; a stone kitchen, 36 by 32 feet; stone stable and granary, with room sufficient to accommodate 32 horses exclusive of other stock, carriage house, and all necessary out houses.” Also on the property was an orchard of apple and peach trees—similar in description to that in the earlier advertisement. According to the description, the property was within five miles of several merchant mills, “twenty-eight miles from Fredericksburg, sixty from Alexandria, and the same distance from George-Town and the Federal City, near two public roads leading to the back country.” This same advertisement also included 10,000 acres “of valuable Kentucky LAND, 2000 of which is military, 1000 on Cumberland River, 1000 at the junction of the Tennessee and Ohio river, which was located early in the year 1783.” The ad concluded with this: “The whole or any part of the said Land will be sold low, and if not sold by the first of November next, it will be rented in 100 acre Lots. It will be sold a very great bargain, and the terms may be known by applying to Edward Voss on the premises, R. B. Voss, or to the subscriber in Fairfax street,” Alexandria, Virginia.

When or where Edward Voss Sr. died is presently unclear. It seems he had several children including sons Edward Voss, Robert Brooke Voss (the R. B. Voss in the advertisement above), Alexander Voss, and Nicholas Voss. He also had daughters Catherine, Celia, and Harriet Voss. Edward Sr. moved his wife and younger children to Richmond, Virginia in 1785, while his older sons remained in Culpeper County where he previously resided. His son, Edward, also a brick mason, took over the operation of the family brick business in Fredericksburg. Edward Jr. married Jane Tunstall and died in 1808 in Culpeper County, Virginia leaving issue William and Jane Elizabeth. Son Robert Brooke Voss married Janet Somerville Knox, daughter of William Knox and Susanna Fitzhugh. He died in 1811,

also in Culpeper County, leaving issue Susan F., Benjamin, Robert Somerville, and William Edward. Son Nicholas Vass died before Sep 1819. He married Mary Spotswood on 9 May 1794 in Culpeper or Orange County, daughter of John Spotswood and Sarah Rowzee. Another daughter, Catherin Voss, married John Greenhaw on 2 Jan 1790 in Henrico County, Virginia. Celia, born 19 May 1764, married Eldridge Harris on 12 Jun 1790. Harriet, born 4 May 1769, married Alexander McCrae on 9 Sep 1794. She died 18 Aug 1802. Alexander McCrae was the noted Virginia attorney who defended Aaron Burr. McCrae also served as Lt. Governor of Virginia, and as U.S. ambassador to Great Britain. He died in London, where he is buried in Westminster Abbey.

Edward Vass seems to have maintained a connection to King and Queen County as late as 21 Sep 1790 when the *Journal of the Council of Virginia* reported that he was fined as a juror. Further information on the incident comes from the *Calendar of Virginia State Papers* which contain a petition filed by Vass on 1 Sep 1790 that reads as follows:

Petition showing that he (Edward Vass) had been fined Five pounds by the court of King and Queen, for contempt of court for not making and obtaining the leave of the court after having been empaneled (sic) as a juror. He states that he was called to that court as a witness in a case, which case was postponed, that the sheriff summoned him for a juryman; that he served on one Jury; that being ignorant of the customs of courts, (never having served on a Jury in Richmond on account of his engagements with the Public), and being very anxious to get back to Richmond to his business and family, he left—not being aware of the necessity of first obtaining leave of the court; and in this way committed the unintentional contempt. He therefore prays the remission of the said fine.

It seems his petition was denied as the fine was assessed. In any case, his connection to Richmond and his comment about being engaged with the Public makes it likely he was involved with work on the capital building at that time.

Before leaving the discussion of Edward Vass, it should be noted there is a 1787 Essex County tax list of land located in the district of William Latane and James Jones which would place this in lower Essex County. The list provides the name of the individual, number of “souls” connected with same, as well as the associated acreage. Written one under the other in this list are the names Edward Vass (4 souls given; no acreage), Henry Vass (no souls given; 250 acres), John Vass (no souls; 100 acres); and William Vass (no souls given; 85 acres). Given the time and place covered by this tax lists, it seems highly likely the Edward listed here is some relation to the John and William Vass.

Let us now conclude with a further discussion of the King and Queen County, plantation called “Melrose” as it relates to some of the families connected with the Vass/Vass lines. Due to the dearth of

records, no further mention of the plantation can be found until 1820, when the King and Queen tax books show that Thomas Claiborne Hoomes had 300 acres of the “Melrose” tract, 191 acres of which he had obtained from Humphrey Garrett, and 99 acres from William M. Hawkins.

What became of the other 700 acres of Thacker’s 1,000-acre tract is uncertain. However, some further facts relating to the plantation have been compiled by Malcolm Harris, who notes that, in 1819, the land of Francis Rowe consisted of 140 acres next to Alden Hart and 317 1/2 acres derived from Hawkins, and adjacent to the lands of J.G. Rowe who lived at “Liberty Hall” plantation. Harris continues the story, noting that Thomas Claiborne Hoomes made his will on 28 Jan 1821, proved at quarterly court on the 12 Mar 1821. In it, he disposed of his personal property and real estate. Hoomes had married Betty, daughter of Robert Pollard and, in his will, he gave her “Melrose,” plantation:

I lend my farm whereon I now reside containing little over 300 acres called Melrose with its appurtenances to my dear wife Betty during her life and after her death I give the said land to my brothers Benj. P. (Hoomes) and John (Hoomes) and sisters Maria and Martha (subject to the trust hereafter mentioned as to the portion of my brother Benjamin) in fee simple.

Harris goes on to note that many years later, in 1838, Samuel H. Stout of Orange County wrote to Peter Thornton Pollard concerning the sale of “Melrose.” Stout had married Mrs. Eleanor Dabney Hoomes Boyd, and her children by Benjamin P. Hoomes had an interest in the plantation. In the same correspondence there is a letter from Charles Palmer to Mr. Pollard authorizing him to sell his interest in “Melrose,” for which he had paid \$500.00. It appears that at this time the interests of the heirs of Benjamin P. Hoomes were involved with Capt. Francis Rowe, who had purchased a part of that interest from Mary Susan Hoomes, who had married Thomas Robinson of King William County, who was concerned with the settlement. Again quoting Harris:

The letter from Palmer dated 17 August 1838 mentions the death of Capt. Francis Rowe, who had spent his whole lifetime in King and Queen County and had accomplished much good during his lifetime, and had served the county in many ways and in offices during that time. ‘Died at his residence in King and Queen County on the third ultimo, after a protracted illness, Capt. Francis Rowe, aged 49 years and 9 months. The deceased left a wife and five children. Capt. Row (sic) was a magistrate in 1812, was created high sheriff in 1833, represented the county in the legislature, and volunteered his services in the artillery of his county of which he was afterwards elected Captain.

From the description in the *Virginia Gazette*, it is clear that “Melrose” was quite a substantial colonial dwelling, two stories in height, built entirely of brick with four rooms on each floor, and an array

of out buildings. But what became of this magnificent structure? Harris does not say. However, Rev. Bagby in his history of King and Queen states that some time after the Civil War, "Melrose" was bought by a Mr. Jacob Turner who dismantled the house and sold enough bricks from the walls to pay the purchase money for the place. This is probably the Jacob W. Turner listed in the 1860 census for King and Queen as a brick layer, age 29 years. Also shown are wife Mary, twin sons Martin and Richard, and a Wilton Oliver. The destruction of this stately mansion was truly an unfortunate end for what was surely one of King and Queen's early architectural gems.

Today, the approximate location of this house is marked by a public boat landing on the Mattaponi River called "Melrose Landing." In fact, this is the same vicinity in which Major John Leigh had his plantation, and doubtless in the general area Leigh, Robert Garrett, and Vincent Vass were directed to procession by the Stratton Major Parish vestry in 1751, lying between Tarsatyan and Great Heartquake swamps. This adds further weight to the possibility of some family connection between Vincent Vass, who lived in this area in the 1750s, and Edward Vass who was there in the 1760s.

There is still more evidence, albeit circumstantial, that indicates possible linkage between "Melrose" and the Vass family. This comes from the association of that plantation with a number of King and Queen families that can also be linked to the Vass line. The story is somewhat circuitous and protracted, but begins with Thomas Claiborne Hoomes who owned some 300 acres of "Melrose" at his death. Recall that Hoomes acquired this land from Humphrey Garrett (191 acres) and from William M. Hawkins (99 acres). As noted, Hoomes married Betsy Pollard, daughter of Robert Pollard. After Hoomes died in 1821, his widow, Betsy, married Col. Alexander Fleet of "Melville," King and Queen County. Hoomes was the son of Capt. Benjamin Hoomes and Mary Pendleton of King and Queen. Mary was the daughter of Maj. Benjamin Pendleton, who married Mary Macon. Maj. Benjamin, in turn, was the son of Philip Pendleton (ca.1695-1753) who married Elizabeth Pollard and he was the son of Philip Pendleton (ca.1654-1724), who married Isabella Hurt. Put another way, Philip Pendleton, who married Elizabeth Pollard, was a brother to Rachel Pendleton who married John Vass who died in Essex County in 1755.

What about the William M. Hawkins who sold 99 acres of "Melrose" to Hoomes? Little is known about him. However, what is known draws a connection to the Gardner and Rowe families of King and Queen. Beverley Fleet, in his series, *Virginia Colonial Abstracts*, discusses some family papers of Judge Francis Wyatt Smith of "Smithfield" plantation, King and Queen County. They include a number of documents related to a chancery case Row or Roe &c. vs. Hoskins Administrators. In particular, they contain the joint and separate answer of Francis Row and John W. Fleet and of Robert Myrick to a bill of complaint exhibited against them and others by Thomas W. Hart, administrator of Spencer

Hoskins, deceased, in the superior court of chancery for the district of Richmond. Fleet abstracts this as follows:

. . . first the said John W. Fleet and Frans (Francis) Row say that it may be true that the said William M Hawkins mentioned in the said bill did depart this life leaving a testament and last will that his widow Harriet qualified as executrix thereto and that the said James G. Row mentioned in the bill did become her security as executrix and that the said complainant did recover a judgment against the said Harriet as executrix of the said William M Hawkins. They also believe it is true that the said James G. Row Dec'd did leave a testament and will in writing and that the said Harriet his widow qualified as executrix thereto. And the said Francis Row and John W. Fleet answering further say that the said William M Hawkins at the time of his death was seized and possessed in fee simple as they believe, of two tracts of land lying in King and Queen County, one of them situated in the lower part of the said County upon the dragon swamp and being chiefly or altogether unreclaimed swamp containing 30 or 40 acres and the other uncleared forest land situated a little below King and Queen court house and adjoining the said Francis Row's land containing 50 to 70 acres, both tracts entirely unproductive, besides which the said William M Hawkins left no real estate so far as they know or believe, that both said tracts of land remain unsold, nor do they know or believe that the said Harriet or the said James G Row and Harriet or either of them ever sold any real estate which was the said William M Hawkins, or how Wm M Hawkins personal estate, except his slaves were disposed of, and they further say that after the death of the said James G Row, the said Harriet sent off and carried away out of this commonwealth to the state of Tennessee, as they are informed, Negroes, slaves of the estate of the said William M Hawkins to the value of fifteen hundred or two thousand dollars and other slaves of the estate of the said James G Row to as great or perhaps greater value; and that the said James G. Row was at the time of his death seized in fee simple of a tract of land situated in King and Queen county on the Mattapony river adjoining Francis Row's land not far below King and Queen court house containing upwards of 700 acres, and that they, by virtue of a deed of trust devised to them, by the will of the said James G Row dec'd, have sold the whole of the said tract of land for the purpose carrying in full and complete effect the said trust to them, but that in the sale, they sold the said land as if it were only 450 acres, which they sold at 10.15 per acre, the rest being marsh land and added to the quantity of high land without estimate, as an inducement to the purchase, which land was duly advertised and the best price obtained that they could procure. And that the said Robert (Myrick) became the purchaser thereof and executed three bonds for the amount with William Jackson mentioned in the said bill as his security, which bonds are each for one third of the amount payable, one of them 9 January 1827, another 9th January 1828 and the third 9th Jan'y 1829, and the said James G Row left one other small piece of land mentioned in his will to contain 12 acres which he devised to two old Negroes London and Hetty, during their lives, on which the said London still lives, Hetty being dead. And these Defendants further answering say that shortly after the death of the said James G Row, Elmira Hawkins mentioned in the said bill, who was devisee under the will of the said James G Row, departed this life an infant and intestate, and leaving, besides her brother, James Hawkins, also a devisee under James G Row's will, another brother named John Hawkins and a sister named Harriet Hawkins, and they are informed that the said Harriet, widow of the said James G Row dec'd, has since her removal from this state intermarried with one ---, and the said William Jackson is also dead since the plaintiff exhibited his said bill. And the said Defts say that they acted as trustees only in regard to the said Jas G Row's estate, so far as the same was acted on by them, and consider that they are not bound in any way to settle acc'ts or in way render any acc't of Wm M Hawkins es-

tate or of Jas G Row's estate, or the ex'rship there of. and also in case Jas G Row's estate is liable that the plt is bound to resort to the said Jas G Row's portion of the estate of Anthy Gardner with their reasonable costs in their behalf sustained, andc (&c.).

From this, it appears William M Hawkins married Harriet, last name unknown, by whom he had issue Elmira Hawkins, James Hawkins, John Hawkins, and Harriet Hawkins. Following her husband's death, Harriet Hawkins married secondly James G. Rowe of King and Queen. Rowe was the son of Maj. Thomas Rowe of King and Queen whose wife was Elizabeth Gardner, daughter of James Gardner, whose will was proved in King and Queen in 1755. According to Malcolm Harris, James G. Rowe owned 665 acres in King and Queen which lay between Henry Fleet's plantation, "Rural Felicity," and that of the Soanes family called "Liberty Hall."

James Gardner also had a son, Dr. Anthony Gardner, who died in King and Queen on 26 Sep 1819. He married Catherine (Waring) Todd, widow of William Todd of King and Queen. Their issue included Elizabeth, who married Samuel Griffin Fauntleroy and Martha, who married John Macon. There is a Todd-Fauntleroy family Bible (1738-1961) in the Virginia State Library. Among the entries is one that states: "William Todd, son of Thomas and Betty Todd Born the 25th day of December 1738." Another says: "Katy Waring Daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Waring Born the 8th day of December 1744." A third entry states: "William Todd was married to Katy Waring the 18th day of December 1760." Some children are listed. Then, in another script, the following is written: "Katy Gardner wife of Doctr. Anthony Gardner who was wife to William Todd Senr. Decd. who was Katy Waring departed this life on Wednesday the 16th of July 1817."

Returning once again to Thomas Claiborne Hoomes, it is proved he had a brother, Benjamin P. Hoomes (ca. 1784-1821), who married Mary Eleanor Dabney. After Benjamin's death, his widow married Col. William Boyd, son of Spencer Boyd of King and Queen and his wife, Lucy. Col. William Boyd's first wife was Mary "Polly" Robinson, daughter, daughter of Speaker John Robinson of King and Queen whom we have met previously in connection with the plantation called "Clifton." After the death of Col. William Boyd, Mary Eleanor (Dabney) (Boyd) married Samuel H. Stout of Orange County, Virginia. The land tax books of King and Queen show that in 1782, Lucy Boyd was charged with 958 acres of land. Then, in 1786, she purchased another 486 acres of land from Humphrey Watkins, which gave her a total of 1,425 acres. After 1800, this land was broken down as follows: Robert Boyd 1,119 acres and William Boyd 300 acres. Worth noting is that this Humphrey Watkins is almost certainly the same man who was involved in a suit in Middlesex County with Thomas Vass of King and Queen.

The above mentioned Spencer Boyd is the same man discussed previously as the son of Dr. James Boyd of King and Queen. As has been noted, he was married twice, with Lucy being his second wife. By his first wife, name unknown, Spencer had a son, James Boyd, and by Lucy, he had sons Spencer, Robert, William, daughter Julia, and a child unborn at the time Spencer Boyd made his will on 7 Dec 1778. His executors were William and Henry Todd of King and Queen, and witnesses were John and Anthony Gardner, Isaac Digges, and Thomas Brown, Boyd's business partner. But, how are all of these King and Queen families associated with Thomas Claiborne Hoomes, who owned 300 acres of "Melrose" at his death, connected with the Vass family? Although the precise nature of the connection remains unknown, it is evident from a suit brought before the Virginia High court of Chancery on 18 Mar 1796 that there was one. This case, which has been mentioned before in connection with the Rust family, is titled: *Sarah Degraffenreid and Vincent Degraffenreid her eldest son and heir at law of Baker Degraffenreid dec'd plaintiffs and Peter Rust ex. of Hannah Rust who was surviving extx. of Benjamin Rust, Anthony Gardner adm. with the will annexed of Spencer Boyd dec'd, William M. Hawkins, Spencer Boyd, Robert Boyd, John Di(d)lake, Betty Boyd wid. of James Boyd dec'd, and Vincent Vass and William Boyd an infant by William M. Hawkins his guardian, defendants.*

Note that the defendants in this case were Peter Rust, who was the executor of Hannah Rust, who was herself the surviving executor of Benjamin Rust of Richmond County, Virginia; Anthony Gardner who was the administrator of the estate of Spencer Boyd; William M. Hawkins; Spencer Boyd, Robert Boyd, John Didlake, Betty (Elizabeth) Boyd, William Boyd, an infant, who was represented in the case by Hawkins his guardian, and a Vincent Vass. The facts of this case are unknown because the records of the Virginia High court of Chancery, which sat in Richmond, Virginia, were burned during the Civil War. There is a further mention of this his case that can found in the 27 Apr 1796 edition of an old newspaper called *The Virginia Gazette and General Advertiser*. This record is a court order, dated 18 Mar 1796 that reads as follows:

The defendant Spencer Boyd not having entered an appearance and given security according to the act of assembly, and the rules of this court, and it appearing to the satisfaction of the court that he is not an inhabitant of this country. On the motion of the plaintiffs, by their counsel, that the said defendant do appear here on the fifth day of next September term, and answer the bill of the plaintiffs, and that a copy of this order be forthwith inserted in some newspaper of the city of Richmond, for two months successively and posted at the front door of the capitol in said city.

The Spencer Boyd referred to in the court order would have been the son of Spencer whose will was proved May 10, 1779.

Appendix A: Vaulx Records of Bruton Parish Church

James Vaulx is listed in Bishop Meade's Old Churches as a vestryman of Bruton Parish church. Meade copied this information from the old vestry book (now lost) that ended in 1769. It is almost certain these records pertain to one/more of the emigrants: Robert, James, Thomas, and Humphrey Vaulx. A Robert Vaulx and a Thomas Vaulx both had wives named Elizabeth. James Vaulx, son of Robert the emigrant, had a wife named Elisheba as noted in the text. The inventory of his estate is included in Appendix A.

DEATHS

1. 1662, Feb 14--Edward Tapper buried, servant to Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX.
2. 1663, Aug 30--John Bazill buried, servant to EDWARD VAULX deceased.
3. 1663, Sep 28--Joan Andrews buried, servant to Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX deceased.
4. 1663, Sep 28--John Davis buried, servant to Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX deceased.
5. 1663, Oct 2--Philip Watson buried, servant to Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX deceased.
6. 1665--Jan 25--Ralph Thompson buried, servant to Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX deceased.
7. 1665, Sep 4--Robert Butler buried, servant to Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX deceased.
8. 1665, Sep 25--Margaret Taylor buried, servant to Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX deceased.
9. 1665, Oct 5--Mrs. ELIZABETH VAULX departed.
10. 1666--ELIZABETH VAULX
11. 1667, Aug 17--Richard Kerr (?) buried, servants to Mrs. VAULX deceased.
12. 1667, Oct 1--Henry Collot buried, servant to Mr. VAULX deceased.
13. 1671, Jul 2--Robert Mon belonging to Mr. JAMES VAULX died ye 13th.
14. 1674--THOMAS VAULX, son of JAMES VAULX (this James is probably son of Robert the emigrant and husband of Elisheba).
15. 1677, NOV 4--JAMES VAULX deceased (this is James son of Robert the emigrant and wife of Elisheba).
16. 1723, Dec 5--ANN VAULX

Appendix B: Inventory of Estate of James Vaulx⁸²

An Inventory of the Estate of Mr. James Vaulx Deceased being taken valued and appraised this 7 day of May 1678 by us whose names are hereunto Subscribed.

Inventory Item(s)	Value in £:s:d
Imprimis 186 lbs of old pewter	07:15:00
2 old pewter Cesterns	00:06:00
2 pewter salt cellars	00:01:06
A Topp of an old pewter Still	00:05:00
1 old pewter bed pan	00:02:06
4 pewter Candlesticks	00:10:00
91 lbs of old brass	04:18:00
2 old bell mettle Scilletts	00:07:00
2 brass Ladles one brass Scimmer	00:03:00
4 old brass Candlesticks	00:04:00

⁸² This inventory can be found on-line in Colonial Williamsburg's digital archives, which can be found here: <http://research.history.org/DigitalLibrary/View/index.cfm?doc=Probates%5CPB01714.xml>.

1 old brass mortar and pestle	00:02:00
1 old brass Kettle	00:10:00
1 old brass warming pan	00:02:06
1 paire of old brass doggs	00:05:00
4 Iron potts 4 paire of pott hookes and one Iron kettle quantity 207 lbs at 3d	02:11:09
3 Iron Candlesticks one Gridiron	00:02:00
one paire of old Stilliards	00:10:00
2 ffrying panns	00:04:00
2 old Spitts	00:01:06
3 old Branding Irons	00:03:00
one old box Iron and 5 heaters	00:02:06
3 pott Racks	00:08:00
one paire of Spitt racks	00:10:00
2 old Iron dripping pans	00:04:00
2 old Swords	00:02:00
one old Copper pott	00:03:00

4 paire of Tongues and 2 fire forkes	00:05:00
1 flesh forke	00:01:00
1 paire of old Iron Doggs	00:05:00
2 old Tenant Saws and Cruscutt saw	00:05:00
1 ffrow	00:01:00
2 Iron pestles	00:04:00
one old oxe Cart wheeles and Tire	03:00:00
A prcell of old Tinn ware	00:02:00
a prcell of earthen ware	00:05:00
4 white Eearthen Chamber potts	00:03:00
A prcell of old Bookes	01:10:00
one old Table and 14 old Leather Chaires	01:18:00
3 old bird Cages	00:03:00
one Trussell for a bed	00:01:06
one bedstead one old feather bed bolster 2 Blanketts one Red Rugg with 2 Curtaines and Vallaines	03:10:00
	32:06:09

1 old blew rugg	00:05:00
1 ffether bed and furniture	04:00:00
1 ffeather bed and bolster	12:00:00
1 sett of hangins for a Chamber	02:00:00
1 Chest of Drawers	03:00:00
4 Chaires Covered with Searge	01:00:00
1 old Trunke	00:08:00
1 Looking glass	00:06:00
1 old ffeather bed bolster 2 pillows	01:18:00
1 ffeather bed 2 blanketts one green rugg and one pillow	05:00:00
12 old Turkie worke chaires	03:12:00
1 Spannish Table and Carpett	01:10:00
3 Small Basketts	00:03:00
2 Chests	00:16:00
1 old Trunke	00:05:00
1 old Looking glass	00:01:06

from the other side	
one old brush	00:00:02
1 old box with Drawers	00:01:06
1 small old Chest	00:02:00
1 feather bed and furniture	05:00:00
1 Chest of Drawers	01:05:00
1 feather bed bolster 2 blanketts and one green rugg	04:00:00
1 small Couch bed and one pillow	00:18:00
1 doz and 11 dyaper napkins and 2 diaper tablecloaths old	02:00:00
10 paire of holland sheets	05:10:00
2 paire of Ticking burgh sheetes	00:14:00
2 pillowbeeres	01:00:00
8 Dowlas napkins and 3 dowlas Tablecloaths	01:00:00
11 Towells	00:05:00
18 old Napkins one old Tablecloth	00:05:00
1 old Looking glass	00:05:00

1 pr of bellows	00:01:00
1 Table	00:08:00
6 Cramps one Basket	00:02:00
3 small Chest very old	00:03:00
1 old feather bed bolster Rugg and 2 old Blanketts	00:15:00
A pcell of Dutch Tiles and a pcell of old Caske and other Lumber	01:10:00
4 paire of Canvas sheetes	01:18:00
28 wooden boles and Trayes	00:14:00
1 old Safe	00:05:00
1 old Churne	00:05:00
2 Doz of Trenchers	00:02:00
4 wedges	00:04:00
1 Chest	00:10:00
1 old Spanish Table and Carpett	00:15:00
	66:06:00
One old Churne	00:05:00

Two Doz of Trenchers	00:02:00
ffoure wedges	00:04:00
one Chest	00:10:00
One old Spannish Table and Carpett	00:15:00
112 Oz of plate--at 5S p oz	28:02:06
A Cargo of goods brought in the Concord amounting to	260:02:06
	289:18:06
William Smith Lame to serve 5 monethes	01:10:00
Humphry Browning to serve 5 moneths	01:10:00
William Baker to serve 15 monethes	04:00:00
William Stroud to serve 2 yeares and ½	08:00:00
William Yeadon to serve 2 yeares and ½	08:00:00
Elizabeth Mullin to serve 2 yeare and ½	05:00:00
John Seed to serve two yeares	08:00:00
Richard Clarke to serve 3 yeares	10:00:00
Richard Herring Lame to serve 6 yeare	10:00:00

William Bostick to serve 5 yeares	12:00:00
John Webb to serve 3 yeares and 8 moneths	12:00:00
Black Dick	28:00:00
Cophie a Negroe Woman	24:00:00
A Mallatto girle Lane of one of her hands	06:00:00
	138:00:00
Severall Money bills Tobacco bills and accompts belonging to the Estate of the Deceased	
Mr William Clarks bill for	30:04:00
Mr Jno Baskervile p noate	00:17:00
Mr William Ayletts accot	01:13:00
Mr Jno Gwynne p bill	02:00:00
Mrs ffrancis Hall p bill	04:18:00
William Coman	00:08:00
Mr Greenly p his noate	00:10:00
Mr Richard Clarke p bill	02:19:08
Cornell Hall p bill	02:19:06

William Bayes p bill	08:00:00
	054:10:04
	029:16:09
	067:12:02
	289:18:06
	138:00:00
	579:17:05
Tobacco	lbs tobo
Mr Anthony Arnold p bill	5000
Thomas Murlows bill	1080
John Phillips bill	1523
George Burleys bill	1167
Robertt Harris bill	0933
Jno Jnosons bill	0700
Mr Richard Awbornes bill	0950
Thomas Saunders bill	0519

Manuell Myers bill	1840
Mr William Phillips bill	0695
Mr Edward foliotts bill	0720
William Comans bill	0897
Coll Wests bill	0368
Capt Corkers Accot	0957
Mr Thomas Robbins	0210
Lnt Mathews Accot	0945
	18504
Tobacco Received of Major Jno Page on the accopt of Mr James Vaulx	02086
36 hhds of Tobacco made at the dwelling house and at the two quarters quantity neate	17702
1677/8 5 hhds of Tobacco Received belonging to the sayd estate Quantity neate	02363
Tobacco	18504
	17702
	02363
	38569

	02086
Summa Totalis	40655

Henery Knighton
 Jno Daniell
 Robertt Bee

An Accot of the horses mares and Colts	
7 yearling Colts	07:00:00
2 two yeare old Colts	02:10:00
1 three yeare old mare	02:00:00
1 three yeare old horse	02:00:00
7 breeding mares	17:10:00
	31:00:00
At the Quarter	
Cowes Calves Steeres and Bulls 19	25:00:00
	31:00:00
	63:00:00
Sum tot	119:00:00

An acct of the Cattle young and old on the plantacon or belonging to the Estate of Mr James Vaulx Deceased	
	1680
6 Oxen	15:00:00
10 Cowes	15:00:00
10 yearlings	05:00:00
4 3 yeare old Heifers	06:00:00
5 3 yeare old Steares	07:10:00
1 Steare 6 yeare old	02:10:00
4 4 yeare old Steeres	08:00:00
2 Bulls	02:10:00
5 Calves	01:10:00
	63:00:00

At the dwelling house and Quarter in all 66 Head of Cattle

Elisheba Vaulx
January the 5th 1681/2

Sworne to in court by Mrs Elisheba Vaulx and Ordered to bee recorded, wch is accordingly done p E
Jenings Cl Cur.